



REESE LIBRARY
OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA.

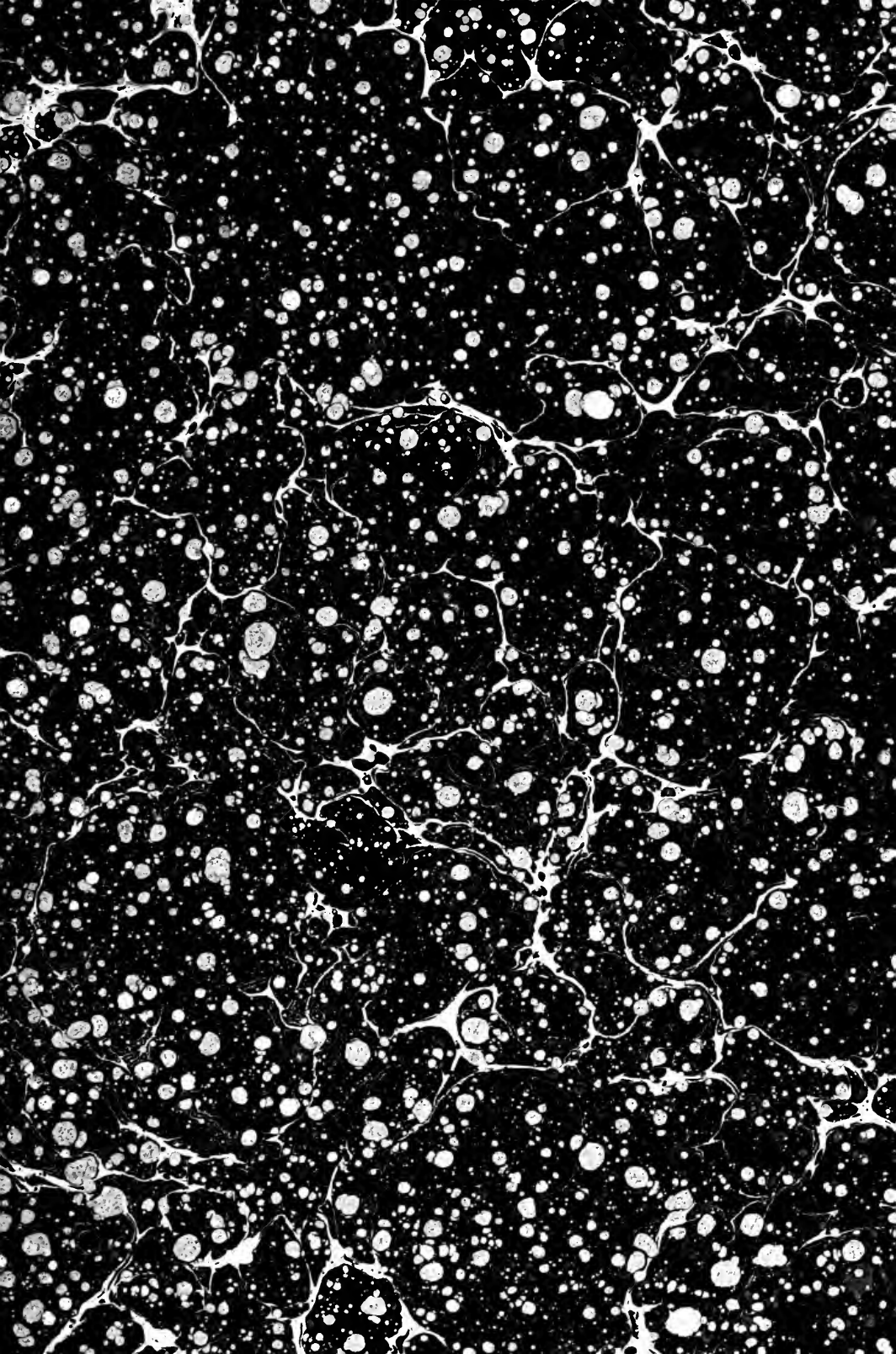
Received *June* 1869.

Accession No. *76361*. Class No.

* *H3A1*
Case 12

The Bancroft Library

University of California • Berkeley



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2008 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation



THE HUTH LIBRARY.

THE WORKS
OF
GABRIEL HARVEY, D.C.L.

VOL. II.

PRECURSOR OF PIERCE'S SUPEREROGATION.
AND
PIERCE'S SUPEREROGATION, OR A NEW PRAYSE OF
THE OLD ASSE.

1593.



Looke how a Tygreffe that hath loft her whelp,
Runs fiercely raging through the woods astray :
And feeing her felfe depriv'd of hope or helpe,
Furiously affaults what's in her way,
To fatisfie her wrath, (not for a pray ;)
So fell ſhe on me in outrageous wife ;
As could difdaine and iealoufie deuife.

DANIEL'S *The Complaint of Roſamona.*

The South Library

OR

ELIZABETHAN-JACOBÆAN

Unique or Very Rare

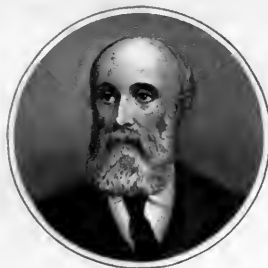
BOOKS

IN

VERSE AND PROSE

LARGELY

From the Library of



Henry Bath, Esq.

Esquire to W. I. ...

Edited with Introductions, Notes and Illustrations, etc.

BY THE

Rev. Alexander B. Grosart, LL.D. F.S.A.

FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY



The Hutch Library.

THE WORKS
OF
GABRIEL HARVEY, D.C.L.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

FOR THE FIRST TIME COLLECTED AND EDITED
WITH MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION, NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS, ETC.,

BY THE REV.

ALEXANDER B. GROSART, LL.D. (EDIN.), F.S.A. (SCOT.),
St. George's, Blackburn, Lancashire.

VOL. II.

PRECURSOR OF PIERCE'S SUPEREROGATION.
AND
PIERCE'S SUPEREROGATION, OR A NEW PRAYSE OF
THE OLD ASSE. A PREPARATIVE TO CERTAIN
LARGER DISCOURSES, INTITULED
NASHES S. FAME.

1593.

PRINTED FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY.

1884.

50 Copies.]



76 361

Printed by Hasell, Watson, and Viney, Limited, London and Aylesbury.

928
H-341
v. 2

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
PRECURSOR OF PIERCES SUPEREROGATION . . .	I
PIERCES SUPEREROGATION, OR A NEW PRAYSE OF THE OLD ASSE. A PREPARATIUE TO CERTAINE LARGER DISCOURSES, INTITULED NASHES S. FAME	27

Foolifh he that feares, and faine would ftop
An inundation working on apace ;
Runs to the breach, heapes mighty matter vp,
Throwes indigefted burthens on the place,
Loades with huge waights, the outside and the top,
But leaues the inner parts in feeble cafe:
Thinking for that the outward forme feemes ftrong
'Tis fure inough, and may continue long.

But when the vnderworking waues come on,
Searching the fecrets of vnfenced waies,
The full maine Ocean following hard vpon,
Beares downe that idle frame, fkorning fuch ftaiies ;
Profrates that frufrate paines as if not done,
And proudly on his filly labors plaies,
Whilft he perceiues his error, and doth finde
His ill proceeding contrary to kind.

So fares it with our indirect diffeignes,
And wrong-contriued labors at the laft,
Whilft working Time or Iuftice vndermines
The feeble ground-worke, Craft thought laid fo faft :
Then when out-breaking vengeance vncombines
The ill-ioynd plots fo fairely ouercaft,
Turnes vp thofe ftrong-pretended heapes of fhowes,
And all thefe weake illufions ouerthrowes.

DANIEL'S *Civill Warres* (1599), B. iii., 4-6.



v.

PRECURSOR
OF
PIERCE'S SUPEREROGATION OR A
NEW PRAYSE OF THE
OLDE ASSE.

1593.



NOTE.

This precursor of the larger 'Pierce's Supererogation' was separately published and in anticipation of its publication. When the latter appeared such copies of the former as remained unsold were bound up with it. But very few must so have remained over, as the present tractate is rarely found prefixed or affixed. Not more than three complete copies seem to be known.

Mr. J. Payne Collier—who reprinted both, like his other reprints of the Harvey-Greene books, with deplorable inaccuracy—supposed that Harvey or his friends suppressed or withdrew the precursor, because he had been so "much laughed at for the vanity and egotism" shown therein. But, seeing that the Printer in his Epistle at the close of the present tractate expressly states that it was to precede the other and larger—incidentally letting out that the so-called 'Preparatiue' was all of 'Nashes S. Fame' intended, for the Letters and Sonnets named are found appended to the larger 'Pierce's Supererogation'—ours is the true explanation, *i.e.*, separate and prior publication. Harvey's "self-admiration" might or might not be "so impervious that it could scarcely distinguish between applause and irony"; but *certainly* none of the (high-flown) laudation was ironical, albeit obtained in part at least under misrepresentation and published without the authors' consent.

For the text of both I am indebted again to the Huth Library. There is a second complete exemplar of precursor and sequel in the British Museum; an incomplete in the Bodleian. See Memorial-Introduction for more of these books.

A. B. G.

Pierces Supererogation


OR

A NEW PRAYSE OF THE
OLD ASSE.

A Preparatiue to certaine larger Discourses, intituled

NASHES S. FAME.

Gabriell Haruey.



Il vostro Malignare Non Giova Nolla.

LONDON

Imprinted by Iohn Wolfe.

1593.



TO MY VERY GENTLE AND LIBE-
*rall frendes, M. Barnabe Barnes, M. Iohn
Thorius, M. Antony Chewt, and
euery fauorable Reader.*



BEING M. Barnabe, M. Iohn, and
M. Antony, (for the rest of my
partiall Cōmenders must pardon
me, till the Print be better ac-
quainted with their names) I haue
lately receiued your thrise-courteous Letters, with
the Ouerplus of your thrise-sweet Sonets annexed:
the liberallest giftes, I beleue, that euer you be-
stowed vpon so slight occasion, and the very prodi-
gallest fruites of your flourishing wittes. Whose
onely default is, not your, but my default, that
the matter is nothing correspondent to the manner;
and miselfe must either grosely forget miselfe, or
frankly acknowledge mi simple selfe an vnworthy

subiect of so worthy commendations. Which I cannot read without blushing, repeate without shame, or remember without grieffe, that I come so exceeding-short in so exceffiue great accountes; the summes of your rich largesse, not of my poore desert; and percase deuised to aduertise me what I should be, or to signifie what you wish [me] to be; not to declare what I am, or to insinuate what I may be. Eloquence, and Curtesie were euer bountifull in the amplifying veine: and it hath bene reputed a frendly Pollicy, to encourage their louing acquaintance to labour the attainment of those perfections, which they blason in them, as already atcheiued. Either some such intention you haue, by way of Stratageme, to awaken my negligence, or enkindle my confidence; or you are disposed by way of Ciuility, to make me vnreasonably beholding vnto you for your extreme affection. Which I must either leaue vnrequited; or recompense affection with affection, & recommende me vnto you with your owne Stratageme, fitter to animate fresher spirites, or to whet finer edges. Little other vse can I, or the world reape of those great-great commendations, wherewith you, and diuers other Orient wittes haue newly furcharged me, by tendring so many kinde Apologies in my behalfe, and presenting so many sharpe inuectiues against my aduersaries: vnlesse also you purposed

to make me notably ashamed of my confessed insufficiency, guilty of so manifold imperfectiōs, in respect of the least semblance of those imputed singularities. Whatsoever your intendment in an overflowing affection was, I am none of those, that greedily surfeit of selfe-conceit, or fottishly hugge their owne babyes. *Narcissus* was a fayre boy, but a boy: *Suffenus* a noble braggard, but a braggard: *Nestor* a sweet-tongued old-man, but an Old-man: and *Tully* (whom I honour in his vertues, and excuse in his ouersightes) an eloquent Selfe-loouer, but a Selfe-loouer. He that thought to make himselfe famous with his ouerweening and brauing *I'e, I'e, I'e*, might perhaps nourish an aspiring imagination to imitate his *Ego, Ego, Ego*, so gloriously reiterated in his gallant Orations. Some smirking minions are fine fellowes in their owne heades, and some cranke Princookes iolly men in their owne humours: as desperate in resolution, as the dowieft ranke of Errant knightes; and as coye in phantasie, as the nicest sort of simpring damofels, that in their owne glasses find no creature so bewtifull, or amiable, as their delicious selues. I haue beheld, / & who hath not seene some lofty conceites, towring very high, & coying themselues sweetly on their owne amounting winges, young feathers of old Icarus? The gay Peacocke is woondrously inamored vpon the

glittering fanne of his owne gorgious taile, and weeneth himfelfe worthy to be crowned the Prince of byrdes, and to be enthronifhed in the chaire of fupreme excellency. Would Chrif, the greene Popiniay, with his newfangled ieftes, as new as Newgate, were not afmuch to fay, as his owne Idol. Queint wittes muft haue a Priuiledge to prank-vp their dainty limmes, & to fawne vpon their owne trickfie deuifes. But they that vnpartially know themfelues, feuerely examine their owne abilities; vprightly counterpoife defectes with fufficiencies; frankly confefse the greateft part of their knowledge, to be the leaft part of their ignorance; aduifedly weigh the difficulties of the painfull and toylefome way, the hard maintenance of credit eafely gotten, the impoffible fatisfaction of vnfatisfiable expectation, the vncertaine fickleneffe of priuate Phantafie, & the certaine brittlenesse of publique Fame; are not lightly bewitched with a fonde doting vpon their owne plumes. And they that deeply confider vpon the weakenesse of inward frailty, the cafualtie of outward fortune, the detraction of Enuie, the virulency of Malice, the counter-pollycy of Ambition, and a hundred-hundred empeachments of growing reputation: that afwell diuinely, as philofophically haue learned to looue the gentleneffe of Humanity, to embrace the mildneffe of Modestie,

to kisse the meekenesse of Humilitie, to loath the odioufnesse of Pride, to assuage the egrenes of Spite, to preuent the vengeance of Hatred, to reape the sweet fruites of Temperance, to tread the smooth Path of Securitie, to take the firme course of Assuraunce, /and to enioy the felicitie of Contentment: that iudicioufly haue framed themselues to carry Mindes, like their Bodies, and Fortunes, as apperteineth vnto them, that would be loth to ouerreach in presumptuous conceit: they I say, and all they that would rather vnderly the reproche of obscuritie, then ouercharge their mediocritie with an illusiue opinion of extraordinary furniture, and I wott not what imaginarie complementes: are readier, and a thousand times readier, to returne the greatest Prayses, where they are debt, then to accept the meanest, where they are almes. And I could nominate some, that in effect make the same reckoning of Letters, Sonets, Orations, or other writinges commendatory, that they do of meate without nourishment, of hearbes without vertue, of plants without fruite; of a lampe without oyle, a linke without light, or a fier without heate. Onely some of vs are not so deuoide of good manner, but we conceiue what belongeth to ciuill duty, and will euer be prest to interteine Curtesie with curtesie, & to requite any frendship with frendship: vnfaignedly desirous,

H. II.

2



rather to recompense in deedes, then to glofe, or paint in wordes. You may easely persuade me to publish, that was long sithence finished in writing, and is now almost dispatched in Print: (the amendes must be addressed in some other more materiall Treatise, or more formal Discourse: and haply *Nashes S. Fame* may supply some defectes of *Pierces Supererogation*;) but to suffer your thrife-affectionate Letters and Sonets, or rather your thrife-lauish beneuolences to be published, which so farre surmount not onely the mediocrity of my present endeouour, but euen the possibility of any my future emproouement; I could not be persuaded by any eloquence, or importunacy in the world, were I not as monstrously / reuiled by some other without reason, as I am exceffiuely extolled by you without cause. In which case he may seeme to a discreet enemy excusable, to an indifferent friend iustificable, that is not transported with his owne passion, but relyeth on the iudgement of the learnedest, and referreth himselfe to the Practise of the wisest. In the one, esteeming *Plutarch* or *Homer* as an hundred Autors: in the other, valuing *Cato*, or *Scipio*, as a thousand Examples. I neuer read, or heard of any respectiue, or considerate person, vnder the degree of those that might reuenge at pleasure, contemne with authority, assure themselues from common

obloquy, or commande publique reputation, (mighty men may finde it a Pollicy, to take a singular, or extraordinary course), so carelesse of his owne credit : so recklesse of the present time, so senselesse of the posterity, so negligent in occurents of consequence, so dissolute in his proceedings, so prodigall of his name, so deuoide of all regarde, so bereft of common sense, so vilely base, or so hugely hawtie of minde ; that in case of infamous imputation, or vnworthy reproch, notoriously scattered-abroad, thought it not requisite, or rather necessary, to stand vpon his owne defence according to Equity, and euen to labour his owne commendation according to the presented occasion. Discourses yeeld plenty of Reasons : and Histories affourde store of Examples. It is no vain-glory to permit with consideration, that abused Modesty hath affected with discretion. It is vanity to controwle, that true honour hath practised : and folly to condemne, that right wisedome hath allowed. If any dislike Immodesty indeede, despise vanity indeede, reprove Arrogancy indeede, or loath Vainglory indeede ; I am as forward with Tongue and Hart as the foremost of the forwardest : and were / my pen answerable, perhaps at occasion it should not greatly lagge behinde. To accomplish, or aduance any vertuous purpose, (sith it is now enforced to be sturring), it might easely be

formal statement

entreated, euen to the vttermoft extent of that little-little Possibility, wherewith it hath pleased the Greateft to endowe it. Howbeit Curtefie is as ready to ouerload with prayfe, as Malice eger to ouerthrow with reproch. Both ouerhoote, as the manner is ; but malice is the Diuell. For my poore part, I hope the One fhall do me as little harme, as fayre weather in my iorney : I am fuer, the other hath done me more good, then was intended, and fhall neuer puddle or annoy the courfe of the cleere running water. Albeit I haue ftudied much, and learned little: yet I haue learned to gleane fome handfulls of corne out-of the rankeft cockle : to make choice of the moft fragrant flowers of *Humanitie*, the moft vertuous hearbes of *Philofophie*, the moft foueraine fruites of *Gouernment*, and the moft heauenly manna of *Diuinitie* : to be acquainted with the fayreft, prouided for the fowleft, delighted with the temperateft, pleased with the meaneft, and contented with all *weather*. Greater men may profefse, and can atchieue greater matters: I thanke God, I know the lēgth, that is, the fhortnes of mine owne foote. If it be any mans pleasure to extenuate my fufficiēcy in other knowledge, or praftife, to empeach my ability in wordes, or deedes, to debafe my fortune, to abridge my commendations, or to annihilate my fame, he

shall finde a cold aduersary of him, that hath layed hoat passions awatering, and might easely be induced to be the Inuectiue of his owne Non-proficiency. Onely he craueth leaue to estimate his credit, and to value his honesty, as behouueth euery man, that regardeth any good: and if withall it be his /vnfained request, that Order should repeale disorder; moderation restraine licentiousnesse; discretion abandon vanity; mildnesse assuage choller; meeknesse alay arrogancy; consideration reclaime rashnesse; indifferency attemper passion; Curtesie mitigate, Charity appease, & Vnity attone debate: pardon him. Or, in case nothing will preuaile with fury but fury, and nothing can winne desired amity, but pretended hostility, that must driue-out one naile with another, & beat-away one wedge with another, according to the Latin Prouerbe: Pardon him also, that in the resolution of a good minde, will commaund, what he cannot entreat; and extort, what he cannot persuade. That little may be done with no great adoo: and, seeing it may as surely, as easely be done, I am humbly to beseech established Wifedome, to winke at one experiment of aduenturous Folly; neuer before embarked in any such actiō, and euer to eschewe the like with a chary regard, where any other mediation may purchase redresse. I will not vrge what conuience hath been noted in as

formal justice
united

diffauorable cafes : it is sufficient for me to pleade mine own acquittall. Other prayse he affecteth not, that in a deepe insight into his innermost partes, findeth not the highest pitch of his Hope, equiualent to the lowest pit of your commendation. And if by a gentle construction, or a fauorous encouragement, he seemeth any thing in others opinion, that is nothing in his owne Censure, the lesser his merite, the greater their mercy ; and the barrainer his desert, the frutefuller your liberality. Whose vnmeasurable prayses I am to interpret, not as they may seeme in some bounteous conceit, but as they are in mine owne knowledge ; good wordes, but vnfitly applied ; frendly beneuolences, but wastfully bestowed ; gallant amplifications, but slenderly deser/ued : what but termes of Ciuility, or fauours of Curtesie, or hyperboles of Looue : whose franke allowance I shall not be able to earne with the study of twenty yeares more : in brieffe, nothing but partiall witnesses, preiudicate iudgements, idle preambles, and in effect meere wordes. And euen so as I found them, I leaue them. Yet let me not dismisse so extensiuue curtesie with an empty hand. Whatsoeuer I am, (that am the least little of my thoughtes, and the greatest contempt of mine owne hart) *Parthenophill* and *Parthenophe* embellished, the *Spanisb Counsellour* Inglished, and *Shores Wife* eternised ; shall euer-

lastingly testifie what you are : go forward in maturity, as ye haue begun in pregnancy, and behold *Parthenopoeus* the sonne of the braue Meleager, *Homer* himselfe, and of the swift Atalanta *Calliope* herselfe: be thou, Barnabe, the gallant Poet, like Spencer, or the valiant souldiour, like Baskeruille ; and euer remember thy *French seruice* vnder the braue Earl of Essex. Be thou, Iohn, the many-tongued Linguist, like Andrewes, or the curious Intelligencer, like Bodley ; and neuer forget thy *Netherlandish traine* vnder Him, that taught the Prince of Nauarre, now the valorous king of Fraunce. Be thou Antony, the flowing Oratour, like Dooue, or the skilfull Heralde, like Clarentius ; and euer remember thy *Portugall voyage* vnder Don Antonio. The beginning of vertuous Proceedings, is the one halfe of honorable actions. Be yourselues in hope, and what yourselues desire in effect: and I haue attained some portion of my request. For you cannot wish so exceeding-well vnto me, but I am as ready with tongue, and minde, to wish a great-deale better vnto you, and to reacquite you with a large vsury of most-affectionate prayers, recommending you to the diuine giftes, and gracious blessings of Heauen.

May /it please the fauorable Reader, to voutsafe me the Curtesie of his Patience, vntill he hath thoroughly perused the whole Discourfe at his

Howers of leifure (for fuch scriblings are hardly worth the vacanteft howers): I am not to importune him any farther; but would be glad, he might finde the Whole, leffe tedious in the end, then fome Parts in the beginning, or midft; or, at-leaft, that one peece might helpe to furnifh-out amendes for an other. And fo taking my leaue with the kindeft Farewell of a moft thankfull minde, I defift from wearying him with a tedious Preface, whom I am likely to tire with fo many superfluous Difcourfes. Howbeit might it happily please the sweeteft Interceffour, to enfwetten the bittereft gall of Spite, and to encalme the rougheft tempeft of Rage; I could cordially wifh, that *Nashes S. Fame* might be the Period of my Inuectiues: and *the excellent Gentlewoman*, my patronesse, or rather Championesse in this quarrel, is meeter by nature, and fitter by nurture, to be an enchanting Angell, with her white quill, then a tormenting Fury with her blacke inke. It remaineth at the election of one, whom God indue with more difcretion.

At London: this 16. of July, 1593. The inuiolable frend of his entire frendes, Gabriell Haruey. /

His content in
quarrelling

Her owne Prologue, or Demurr.

*O Muses, may a wooman poore, and blinde,
 A Lyon-draggon, or a Bull-beare binde ?
 Ist possible for puling wench to tame
 The furibundall Champion of Fame ?
 He brandisbeth the whurlewinde in his mouth,
 And thunderbolteth fo-confounding shott :
 Where such a Bombard-goblin, North, or South,
 With drad Pen-powder, and the conquerous pott ?
 Silly it is, that I can sing, or say :
 And shall I venture such a blustrous fray ?
 Hazard not, panting quill, thy aspen selfe :
 Hel'e murther thy conceit, and braine thy braine.
 Spare me, ô super domineering Elfe,
 And most, railipotent for euer raine.*

Si Tibi vis ipfi parcere, parce Mihi.

Her Counter-sonnet, or Correction of her owne
Preamble.

*Scorne frump the meacock Verse that dares not sing,
 Drouping, so like a flagging flowre in raine :
 Where doth the Vraney or Fury ring,
 That shall enfraight my stomacke with disdaine ?
 Shall Frend put-up such braggardous affrontes ?
 Are milksop Muses such whiteliuer'd Trontes ?
 Shall Boy the gibbet be of Writers all,
 And none hang-up the gibbet on the wall ?*

*If | dreery hobbling Ryme hart-broken be,
 And quake for dread of Danter's scarecrow Presse :
 Shrew Prose, thy pluckcrow implements addresse,
 And pay the hangman pen his double fee.
 Be Spite a Sprite, a Termagant, a Bugg :
 Truth feares no ruth, and can the Great Diu'll tugg
 ———Ultrix accineta flagello.*

Her old Comedy, newly intituled.

*My Prose is resolute, as Beuis sworde :
 March rampant beaft in formidable hide :
 Supererogation Squire on cockhorfe ride :
 Zeale shapes an aunswer to the blouddiest worde.
 If nothing can the booted Souldiour tame,
 Nor Ryme, nor Prose, nor Honesty, nor Shame,
 But Swath will still his trompery aduaunce,
 It'e leade the gagtooth'd fopp a new-founde daunce.
 Deare howers were euer cheape to pidling me :
 I knew a glorious, and brauing Knight,
 That would be deem'd a truculentall wight :
 Of him I scrauld a dowty Comedy.
 Sir Bombarduccio was his cruell name :
 But Gnafharduccio the sole brute of Fame.*

L'Enuoy.

*See, how He brayes, and fumes at me poore lasse,
 That must immortalise the killcowe Affe. |*

*TO THE RIGHT WORSHIPFULL, his especial
deare friend, M. Gabriell Haruey, Doctour of Lawe.*

SWEET M. Doctour Haruey, (for I cannot intitule you with an Epithite of lesse value then that which the Grecian, and Roman Oratours ascribed to Theophrastus, in respect of so many your excellent labours, garnished with the garland of matchlesse Oratory): if at any time either the most earnest perswasion of a deare friend, and vnusually most deare, and constant, adiured therevnto by the singular vertue of your most prayse-worthy, and vnmatchable wit: or the woonderful admiration of your peerlesse conceit, embraued with so many gorgeous ornamentes of diuine Rhetorique: or the doubtlesse succeffiue benefit thereof, deuoted to the glory of our English Eloquence, and our vulgar Tuscanisme (if I may so terme it); may worke any plausible or respectiue motions with you to bewtifie, and enrich our age, with those most praise-moouing workes, full of gallantest discourse, and reason, which I vnderstand by some assured intelligence be now glowing vpon the anvile, ready to receiue the right artificiall forme of diuineſt workemāship: thē let I beseech you, nay, by all our mutuall friendships I coniure you (loue and admiration of them arming me with the placarde of farther confidence) those, and other

situation
plan
cat 12
18611

your incomparable writings, speedily, or rather pre/sently, shew theselues in the shining light of the Sunne. That, by this Publication of so rare, & rich Discourses, our English Rauens, the spitefull enemyes to all birdes of more bewtifull wing, and more harmonious note then themselues, may shroude themselues in their nests of basest obscurity, & keepe hospitality with battes, and owles, fit consorts for such vile carions. Good Sir, arise, and confound those Viperous Cryticall monsters, and those prophane Atheistes of our Commonwealth; which endeouour with their mutinous and Serpentine hissing, like geese, not to arme the Senatours and Oratours of Rome, but to daunt, astonish, and, if it were possible, to ouerthrow them. And sithence the very thunder-lightning of your admirable Eloquence, is sufficiētly available to strike them with a lame Palsie of tongue, (if they be not already smitten with a fencelesse Apoplexy in head, which may easely enfewe such contagious Catharres and Reumes, as I am priuy some of them haue been grieuouly diseased withall), misse not, but hitt them feurlly home, as they deserue with Supererogation. You haue bene reputed euermore, since first I heard of you in Oxford and elsewhere, to haue bene as much giuen to fauour, commende, and frequent such as were approoued, or toward in learning,

SONNET.

*Those learned Oratours, Roomes auncient sages,
 Persuasions Pith, directours of affection,
 The mindes chief counsail, rhetoriques perfection,
 The pleasaunt baulms of peace, warres fierce
 outrages:*
*Sweet Grecian Prophets, whose smooth Muse assuages
 The Furies powerfull wrath, poisons infection :*
*Philosophers (by Causes due connexion,
 Match't with th' Effects of Nature) future ages
 Embraving with rich documents of Art : |*
The wisest States-men of calme Commonweales :
*The learned Generall Councils, which impart
 Diuineſt laws, whose wholesome Physique Heales
 Both Church, and Layety : All in one beholde
 Ennobled Arts, as Precious stones in golde.*

From my lodging in Holborne: this of June.
 1593. Your most affectionate,

Barnabé Barnes.

Hauing perused my former Sonet, if it may please you, Sir, to do asmuch for your deare friends *Parthenophill*, and *Parthenophe*, they shall haue the desired fruite of their short exercise, and will rest beholding to your curteous acceptance: which they would be glad to reacquite in the louingest manner they may. And so most affec-

tionatly recommend themfelues vnto your good
 felf: whose vnblemifhed fame they will euermore
 maintaine with the beft bloud of their hartes,
 tongues, and Pennes. We will not fay, how
 much we long to fee the whole Prayfes of your
 two notorious enemyes, the *Affe* and the *Foxe*.

SONET.

Nafb, or the confuting Gentleman.

The Muses fcorne; the Courtiers laughing-ftock;
The Countreys Coxecombe; Printers proper new;
The Citties Leprofie; the Pandars ftew;
Vertues difdayne; honefties aduerfe rock;
Enuies vile champion; flanders stumblingblock.
Graund | Oratour of Cunny-catchers crew;
Base broaching tapfter of reports vntrue;
Our moderne Viper, and our Countryes mock;
True Valors Cancer-worme, fweet Learnings ruft.
Where fhall I finde meete colours, and fit wordes,
For fuch a counterfait, and worthleffe matter?
Him, whom thou rayleft on at thine owne luft,
Sith Bodine and fweet Sidney did not flatter,
His Inueſtiue thee too much grace affordes.

Parthenophil.

SONET.

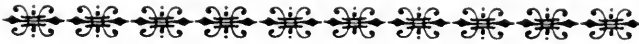
Haruey, or the sweet Doctour.

Sidney, *sweet Cignet, pride of Thamesis ;*
Apollo's laurell ; Mars-his proud prowesse :
 Bodine, *register of Realmes happinesse,*
Which Italyes, and Fraunces wonder is :
 Hatcher, *with silence whom I may not misse :*
Nor Lewen, Rhetoriques richest noblesse :
Nor Wilson, whose discretion did redresse
Our English Barbarisme : adioyne to this
Diuineſt morall Spencer : let theſe ſpeake
By their ſweet Letters, which do beſt vnfold
 Harueys *deſerued praiſe : ſince my Muſe weake*
Cannot relate ſomuch as hath bene tould
By theſe Fornam'd : then, vaine it were to bring
New feather to his Fames ſwift-feathered wing.
 Parthenophe.

THE PRINTERS ADUERTISSE-
 ment to the Gentleman Reader.

Curteous Gentlemen, it ſeemed good to M. Doctour Haruey, for breuity-fake, and becauſe he liked not ouer-long Preambles, or Poſtambles, to ſhort diſcourſes, to omit the commendatorie Letters, and Sonnets of M. Thorius, M. Chewt, and diuers other his affectionate friendes of London, and both the

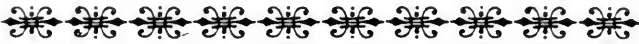
Vniuersities. Which neuerthelesse, are referued to be prefixed, inserted, or annexed, either in his defensiu Letters, enlarged with certaine new Epistles of more speciall note; or in his Discourses of Nashes S. Fame, already finished, & presently to be published, as these shall like their interteinement: of whose fauorable & plausible Welcome, diuers learned and fine wittes haue presumed the best. Howbeit finally it was thought not amisse, upon conference with some his aduised acquaintance, to make choice of some two or three of the reasonablest, and temperatest Sonnets (but for variety, & to auoyde tediousnesse in the entrance, rather to be annexed in the end, then prefixed in the beginning of the present Discourses): one of the foresayd M. Thorius, an other of M. Chewt, and the third of a learned French gentleman, Monsieur Fregeuill Gautius, who hath published some weighty Treatises, aswell Politique as Religious, both in Latin and French; and hath acquainted M. Doctor Haruey with certaine most profitable Mathematicall deuises of his own inuention. The residue is not added by me, but annexed by the Autor himselfe: whom I humbly recommende to your curteous Censure, and so rest from ouertroubling you with my vnpolished lines.



VI.

PIERCE'S SUPEREROGATION OR
A NEW PRAYSE OF THE
OLDE ASSE.

1593.



NOTE.

It will be noticed that the title-page of 'Pierce's Supererogation' is identical with that of its slender precursor (see relative Note, page 2). So that the precursor was a 'preparative' to a 'preparative,' although the Printer in his Epistle to the former deals with the so-called 'Preparative' as really 'Nashes S. Fame,' by appending to it the Letters and Sonnets specified by him. As stated in Note before the Precursor, I am indebted for our text to the Huth Library. See Memorial-Introduction for more.

A. B. G.

Pierces Supererogation

OR

A NEW PRAYZE OF THE
OLD ASSE.

A Preparatiue to certaine larger Discourses, intituled
NASHES S. FAME.

Gabriell Haru-y.



LONDON

Imprinted by Iohn Wolfe.

1593.





Pierces Supererogation.

OR

A NEW PRAYSE OF THE

OLD ASSE.

A Preparatiue to certaine larger Discourses, intituled

NASHES S. FAME.



Was euer vnwilling to vndertake any enterprise, that was vnmeete for me ; or to play any part, either in earnest, or in iest, that might ill befeme me: and neuer more vnwilling then at this instant, when I must needes do it, or put something in hazard, that I would be loth to commit to the curtesie of aduenture. Not because my Confuters swordes, or my enemies daggers carry any credite with the wise ; or because my Letters feare any

discredite with the honest ; or because I cannot abide to be confuted, that daily confute my selfe, and condemne every mine owne default with rigour : but because Silence may seeme suspicious to many ; Patience contemptible to some ; A good minde, A bad hart to those, that value all by courage ; A knowne forbearer of Libellers, A continuall bearer of coales ; and there is no end of abuses vpon abuses, of iniuries vpon iniuries, of contempt vpon contempt, where presumptuous Impudency, and odious Slaunder, the two errantist vagabonds in the world, may safe conduct themselves, and franckely passe vncontrolled. Yet were that, either / all, or the worst of all, I could still vow silence in brawles, and would still profess Patience in wronges : (I hate brawles with my hart : and can turne-ouer A volume of wronges with a wett finger :) but some cunning men, that carry hooney in their mouthes, and gall in their hartes, not so sweete in the Premisses, as bitter in the Conclusion, can smoothly, and finely descant vpon the least aduantage, howsoever iniurious : and certaine pretty Experiences, by way of sensible instruction, haue taught some, that Malice was neuer such an hypocrite, as now ; and the world neuer such a Scoggin, as now ; & the Diuell neuer such a knaue, as now : & what a desperate dissoluteness were it in him, that regardeth his

good name, to abandon himselfe, or to relinquish the deereſt thing in this life, (I know no deerer thing, then honeſt credite) to the fauour of Enuy, or to the diſcretion of Fortune? Gentlemen, he is hardly beſtead for a Patrone, that relyeth on the tuition of Enuy, or reſoſeth his affiance in the protection of Fortune: and he muſt not take it vnkindely, to bee forſaken of other by the way, that forſaketh himſelfe in the way. Euen he that loueth not to be his owne defender, much leſſe his owne prayſer (do him no wrong, my Maſters, though ye doe him no right) yet hateth to be his owne traytor: and hath reaſon to experimete ſome rounde concluſions, before hee offer his throte to the blade of villany, or his forehead to the brand of diffamation. And although he be the ſubieſt of his own contempt, and the argument of his owne Satyres: (ſurely no man leſſe doteth vpon himſelfe, or more ſeuerely cenſureth his own imperfections :) yet he in ſome reſpects diſdayneth to be reuiled by the abieſts of the world. Whoſe diſpraiſe in ſome age were a commendation, and whoſe praiſe an inuectiue: but this is a queint world, and needeth no Aprill / ſhowers, to furniſh May-games. I proteſt, I haue theſe many yeeres, not in pride, but in iudgement, ſcorned, to appeere in the rancke of this ſcribling generation: and could not haue bene hired with a

great fee, to publish any Pamflet of whatfoever nature, in mine owne name, had I not bene intollerably prouoked, first by one rakehell, and now by an other, the two impudentest mates, that euer haunted the presse: (some haue called them knaues in grose: I haue found them fooles in retayle:) but when it came to this desperate point, that I must needes either bee a base writer, or a vile Assè in printe, the lesse of the two euils was to be chosèn: and I compelled rather to alter my resolution for a time, then to preiudice my selfe for euer. They that list may feede at the manger with the sonnes of the Mule: it is another Table-Philosophy, that I fansie. Howbeit amongst all the misfortunes, that euer happened vnto me, I account it my greatest affliction, that I am constrained to buy my penne, without ground, or substance of discourse, meete for an actiue and industrious world. Euery man hath his crosses in one accident, or other: but I know not a greeuouffer persecution, then a base employment of precious time, necessarily enforced. Other crosses may someway edifie: this is a plague without remedy; a torment without end; a hell without redemption. As in the course of my study, it was allwayes my reckoning; He loofeth nothing, whatfoever he loseth, that gaineth Time: so in the taske of my writing, or other exercise,

u. 2. p.
10. 2. 11
1. 2. 11

1. 2. 11
1. 2. 11

1. 2. 11
1. 2. 11

it is my account ; He gayneth nothing, whatſoever he gayneth, that looſeth Time. A good matter, deliuered in good manner, winneth ſome eſtimation with good mindes : but no manner ſufficient to countenance a contemptible Theame : & a rascal ſubieſt abafeth any forme : or what hath drowned the / memory of the trimmeſt, and daintieſt trifles, that fine conceit hath deuifed ? Were it mine owne election, I might worthily incurre many reprooſes, and iuſtly impute them to my ſimple choyce : but Neceſſity hath as little free will, as Law ; and compelleth like a Tyrant, where it cannot perſwade, like an Oratour, or aduiſe like a Counſellour. Any Vertue, an honourable Common-
place, and a flourishing braunch of an heauenly tree : Politique, and militar affaires, the woorthieſt matters of conſultation, and the two Herculean pillars of noble ſtates : the priuate liues of excellent perſonages in ſondry courſes, and the publike actions of uiſſant nations in ſondry gouernementes, ſhining mirrours of notable uſe for the preſent time, and future ages. Were it at my appointment, to diſpoſe freely of mine owne howers : O how willingly, and cheerefully could I ſpend the freſheſt & deereſt part of my life, in ſuch argumentes of valour ? Learninge is a goodly and gallant Creature in many partes : & diuers members of that beautifull body vpbraide

the most-exquisite penne, and most-curious pencil of insufficiency : no diligence too-much, where no labour inough : the fruitefullest sciences require painefullest industry, and some liuely principles would be touched to the quicke : whatfoeuer booke-case, or schole-point is found by experience to be essentiall, and practicable in the world, deferueth to be discuffed with sharpe inuention, and found iudgement. I could yet take pleasure, and proffite, in canuassing some Problems of naturall Philosophy, of the Mathematiques, of Geography, and Hydrography, of other commodious experimentes, fit to aduance many valorous actions : and I would vppon mine owne charges, trauaile into any parte of Europe, to heare some pregnant Paradoxes, and certaine singular questions in the / highest professions of Learning, in Physick, in Law, in Diuinity, effectually and thoroughly disputed *pro, & contra* : and would thinke my trauaile as aduantageously bestowed to some purposes of importance, as they that haue aduenturously discovered new-found Landes, or brauely surprized Indies. What conferences, or disputations, what Parliaments, or Councils, like those, that deliberate vpon the best gouernement of Commonwealthes, and the best discipline of Churches ; the dubble anchor of the mighty shipp, and the two great Luminaries of

the world? Other extrauagant discourfes, not materiall, or quarrelous contentions, not auailable, are but wafing of winde, or blotting of paper. What fhould Exercife, or ftuddy, burne the Sunne or the candle in vaine? or what fhould I doe againft my felfe, in fpeakinge for my felfe, if outward refpectes did not inwardly gripe, and a prefent exigence lay violent handes vpon me? Though extremity be powerable, yet an vnwilling will is excufable. Philofophers, and Lawyers can beft argue the cafe of inuoluntary actes: but what fo forcible, as compulfion: or fo pardonable, as a paffiue action? Blame him not, or blame him gently, that would be a little loth, to be dieted at the racke of the old Affe, or to be bitten of the young dog. He is no party in the caufe, that pleadeth thus againft *Aristogiton*. Sweet Gentlemen, imagine it to be a fpeech, addreffed vnto your felues. *Peraduenture the viper did neuer bite any of you; and the Gods forbid, it fhould euer bite you: but when you efpie any fuch pernicious creature, you prefently difpatch it: in like manner when you behold a Sycophant, and a man of a viperous nature, looke not till he hath bitten fome of you, but fo foone as he starteth-up, pull him downe.* And againe in another place of the fame fententious, and politike Oration: *Hee that mainetayneth a Sycophant, is by nature and kinde an ennemy of the good:*

vnlesse some-body imagine, that the seede and roote of a naughty Sycophant ought to remaine in the Citty, as it were for store, or good husbandry. Demosthenes was as deeply wise, as highly eloquent : and hath many such notable sentences, as it were Caueats, or Prouisoes, against the daungerous ennemies of that flourishing Citty, and especially against Calumniatours, whose viperous sting hee could by no meanes auoide : albeit otherwise such an Oratour, as could allure heartes with perswasion, or coniure mindes with astonishment. I would no other Citty loued figges: or must an other Citty of necessity loue figges, because it is growne an other Athens, a mother of eloquence, a nurse of learning, a grandame of valour, a seat of honor, and as Aristotle termed Athens, a garden of Alcinous, wherein one fruite ripeneth vpon an other, one peare vppon an other, one grape vpon an other, and one figge vppon an other. The Sycophant be his owne interpreter : & if he may be licensed, or permitted to bee his owne caruer too, much good may it doe him, and sweete digestion geue him ioy of his dainety figg. I must haue a little care of one, that cãnot easily brucke vnreasonable sawcinesse : & would be loth to see the garden of Alcinous made the garden of Greene, or Motley. It was wont to be said by way of a Prouerbe ; Hee that will be made a sheepe, shall find wolues inough : but forsooth this

exceeding-wise worlde, is a great Assè-maker : and he that will suffer himselfe to be proclaimed an Assè in printe, shall bee sùre neuer to want loade and loade inough. Who so ready to call her neighbour, a skold, as the rankest skold of the parish : or who so forward to accuse, to debase, to reuile, to crow-treade an other, as the arrantest fellow in a country ? Let his owne mouth / be his pasport, or his owne penne his warrant : & who so leawd as his greatest aduersary, modesty : or so honest, as his deereft friend, villany : or so learned, as his learnedest counsell, vanity : or so wise, as his profoundest Autor, young Apuleius. What familiar spirite of the Ayre, or fire, like the glibb, & nimble witt of young Apuleius ? or where is the Eloquence that should describe the particular perfections of young Apuleius ? Prudence, may borrow, discretion : Logique, arguments ; Rhetorique, coulours ; Phantasy, conceites ; Steele, an edge ; and Gold, a luster, of young Apuleius. O the rare, and queint Inuention, ô the gallant, and gorgeous Elocution : ô the braue, and admirable amplifications : ô the artificiall, and fine extenuations : ô the liuely pourtraitures of egregious prayfes, and disprayfes : ô the cunning, and straunge mingle-mangles : ô the pithy iestes, and maruelous girdes of yong Apuleius : the very prodigality of Art, and Nature. What greater

impossibility, then to decipher the high, and mighty stile of young Apuleius, without a liberall portion of the same eleuate spirite? Happy the old father, that begat, and thrife happy the sweete Muses, that suckled, and fostered young Apuleius. Till Admiracion hath found-out a smother and trickier quill for the purpose : Desire must be content to leaue the supple and tidy constitution of his omnittufficient Witt, vndisplayed. Onely it becommeth gentle mindes to yeeld themselues thanckefull ; and to tender their bounden duety to that inestimable pearle of Eloquence, for this precious glimze of his incomprehensible valour ; one shorte Maxime, but more worth, then all the Axioms of Aristotile ; or the Ideas of Plato ; or the Aphorismes of Hippocrates ; or the Paragraphes of Iustinian. He knoweth not to manage his penne, that was not born with an Assē / in his mouth ; a foole in his throate ; and a knaue in his whole body. Simple men may write against other, or pleade for themselues : but they cannot confute cuttingly, like a hackster of Queen-Hith, or bellow lustely, like the foreman of the Heard. I goe not about to discouer an Assē in an Oxes hide : hee needeth no other to pull him by the famous eares, that is so hasty to descry, and so busy to bestirre his wisest partes : but what a notable Assē indeede was I, that fought the winges of a mounting Pegafus, or

a flying Phenix, where I found the head, & feete of a braying creature? Some promifes, are desperate debtes: and many threatninges, empty cloudes; or rather armies fighting in the ayre, terrible visions. Simplicity cannot dubble: and plaine dealing will not difsemble. I looked either for a fine-witted man, as quicke as quick-filuer, that with a nimble dexterity of liuely conceite, and exquisite fetretaryship, would out-runne mee many hundred miles in the courfe of his dainty deuifes; a delicate minion: or some terrible bombarder of tearmes, as wilde as wild-fire, that at the first flash of his fury, would leaue me thunder-stricken vpon the ground, or at the laft volley of his outrage, would batter me to duft, and afhes. A redoubted aduerfary. But the trimme filke-worme, I looked for, (as it were in a proper contempt of common fineneffe) proueth but a filly glow-woorme: and the dreadfull enginer of phrafes, in fteede of thunderboltes, fhooteth nothing but dogboltes, and catboltes, and the homeliest boltes of rude folly. Such arrant confuting ftuffe, as neuer print faw compiled together, till maifter Villany became an Autor; and Sir Nash a gentleman. Printers, take hede how ye play the Heralds: some lufly gentlemen of the maker, can no fooner bare a Goose-quill, or a Woodcockes feather in their fhield, but they / are like the renowned Lobbelinus, when hee

had gotten a new coate: and take vpon them, without pittie, or mercy, like the onely Lordes of the field. If euer Esquier rauid with conceit of his new Armes, it is Danters gentleman: that mightily despiseth, whatsoeuer hee beholdeth from the high turret of his creast, and cranckly spitteth vppon the heads of some, that were not greatly acquainted with such familiar-entertainment. His best frende, be his Iudge: and I appeale to my worst ennemy, whether he neuer read a more pestilent example of prostituted Impudency? Were hee not a kinsman of the foresayd viper, a Dog in malice, a Calfe in witt, an Oxe in learning, and an Assē in discretion: (time shall cronicle him, as he is:) was it possible, that any mā should haue bestowed some broad, and loud tearmes, as he hath done? Who could abide it, without actuall reuenge, but hee, that enterteineth spite with a smile, maketh a pastime of Straunge Newes; turneth choler into sanguine, vineger into wine, vexation into sport, and hath a salue for a greater fore.

Come young Sophisters, you that affecte raylinge in your disputations, and with a clamorous howte would fet the Philosophy schooles *non plus*: come olde cutters, you that vse to make dowty frayes in the streetes, and would hack-it terribly: come hee-and shee-scoldes, you that loue to pleade-it-out

inuincibly at the barre of the dunghill, & will rather loose your liues, then the last word: come bufy commotioners, you that carry a world of quarrelous wits, and mutinous touniges in your heads: come most-redowted Momus, you that will sternely keepe heauen, and earth in awe: come running heads, and giddy pennees of all humours, you that daunce attendance vpon oddest fashions: and learne a perfect methode, to passe other, and to excell your /selues: such a new-deuifed modell, as neuer saw Sun before, & may make the gayest mold of antiquity to blush. Old Archilochus, and Theon, were but botchers in their rayling faculty: Stefichorus, but a grose bungler: Aristarchus but a curious, and nice foole: Aristophanes and Lucian but merry iesters: Ibis against Ouid; Meuius against Horace; Carbilius Piccor against Virgill; Lauinius against Terence; Crateua against Euripides; Zoilus against Homer, but ranke fowters. Salust did but dally with Tully: Demades but toy with Demosthenes: Pericles but sporte with Thucydides, and so forth. For examples are infinite: and no exercise more auncient, then Iambiques amongst Poetes; Inuectiues amongst Oratours; Confutations amongst Philosophers; Satyres amongst Carpers; Libels amongst factioners; Pasquils amongst Malcontentes; and quarrells amongst all. But the Olde Assè was

an Infante in Witt, and a Grammer Scholler in Arte : Lucians Rhetor, neuer so brauely furnished, will be heard with an Eccho : Iulian will rattle Christendome : Arrius will shake the Church : Macchiauell will yerke the Commonwealth : Vnico Aretino will scourge Princes : and heere is a lusty ladd of the Castell, that will binde Beares, and ride golden Asses to death. Were the pith of courage lost, it might be founde in his penne : or were the marrow of conceite to seeke, where should witt looke for witt, but in his Incke-bottle? Arte was a Dunse, till Hee was a writer : and the quickest Confuter, a drowfy dreamer, till he put a life into the dead quill, & a flye into the wooden boxe of forlorne Pandora. A pointe for the Satyrist, whose conceite is not a Ruffian in folio : and a figg for the Confuter, that is not a Swashbucler with his pen. Old whimwhams haue plodded on, long enough : fresh inuention from the tapp, must / haue his friskes, & careers an other while : and what comparable to this spowte of yarking eloquence? Giue me the fellow, that is as Peerelesse, as Pennyleffe ; and can oppose all the Libraries in Poules Churchyard, with one wonderfull work of Supererogation ; such an vnmatcheable peece of Learning, as no bookes can counteruaile, but his owne ; the onely recordes of the singularities of this age. Did I speake at a venture. I might

deceiue, and be deceiued : but where Experience is a witnesse, and iudgement the Iudge, I hope the errorr will not be vnreasonably great.

There was a time, when I floted in a sea of encountring waues; and deuoured many famous confutations, with an eager, and insatiabie appetite: especially Aristotle against Plato, and the old Philosophers: diuers excellent Platonistes, indued with rare, & diuine wittes, (of whome elsewhere at large,) Iustinus Martyr, Philoponus, Valla, Viues, Ramus, against Aristotle: oh but the great maister of the schooles, and high Chauncellour of Vniuersities, could not want pregnant defence: Perionius, Gallandius, Carpentarius, Sceggius, Lieblerus against Ramus: what? hath the royall Professour of Eloquence, and Philosophy, no fauourites? Talæus, Offatus, Freigius, Minos, Rodingus, Scribonius, for Ramus against them; and so foorth, in that hott contradictiory course of Logique, and Philosophy. But alas filly men, simple Aristotle, more simple Ramus, most simple the rest, either ye neuer knew, what a sharpe-edged, & cutting Confutation meant: or the date of your stale oppositions is expired; and a new-found land of confuting commodities discovered, by this braue Columbus of tearmes, and this onely marchant venturer of quarrels; that detecteth new Indies of Inuention, & hath the winds of Æolus

at commaundement. Happy, you flourishinge youthes, / that follow his incomparable learned steps: and vnhappy we old Dunfes, that wanted such a worthy President of all nimble and liuely dexterities. What should I appeale infinite other to their perpetuall shame: or summon such, and such to their foule disgrace? Erasmus in Latine, and Sir Thomas More in English, were supposed fine, and pleasant Confuters in their time, and were accordingly embraced of the forwardest and trimmest wittes: but alacke how vnlike this dainty minion? Agrippa was reputed a gyant in confutation; a demi-god in omnifufficiency of knowledge; a diuell in the practise of horrible Artes: oh, but Agrippa was an vrcheon, Copernicus a shrimpe, Cardan a puppy, Scaliger a baby, Paracelsus a scab, Eraftus a patch, Sigonius a toy, Cuiacius a bable to this Termagant; that fighteth not with simple wordes, but with dubble swordes: not with the trickling water of Helicon, but with piercing Aqua fortis: not with the sorry powder of Experience, but with terrible gunpowder: not with the small shott of contention, but with the maine ordinaunce of fury. For breuity I ouerskip many notable men, and valorous Confuters in their feuerall vaines: had not affection otherwhiles swunged their reason, where reason should haue swayed their affection. But Partiality, was euer

the busiest Actour; and Passion, the whottest Confuter: whatfoeuer plausible cause otherwise pretended: and hee is rather to bee esteemed an Angell, then a man, or a man of Heauen, not of Earth, that tendereth integrity in his hart; equity in his tounge; and reason in his penne. Flesh, and bloud are fraile Creatures, and partiall discourfers: but he approacheth neereft vnto God, & yeeldeth sweetest fruite of a diuine disposition, that is not transported with wrath, or any blinde passion, but guided with cleere, / and pure Reason, the soueraigne principle of sound proceeding. It is not the Affirmatiue, or Negatiue of the writer, but the trueth of the matter written, that carryeth meat in the mouth, and victory in the hande. There is nothing so exceeding foolish, but hath bene defended by some wise man: nor any thinge so passinge wise, but hath bene confuted by some foole. Mans will, no safe rule, as Aristotle sayth: good Homer sometime sleepeth: S. Augustine was not ashamed of his retractations: S. Barnard saw not all thinges: and the best chart may eftsoones ouerthrow. He that taketh a Confutation in hand, must bringe the standard of Iudgement with him; & make Wisedome the moderatour of Wit. But I might aswell haue ouerpassed the censure, as the persons: & I haue to do with a party, that valueth both alike, and can phansy no

Autor, but his owne phanfy. It is neyther reafon, nor rime, nor witt, nor arte, nor any imitation, that hee regardeth: hee hath builded towers of Superarrogation in his owne head, and they muft stand, whofoeuer fall. Howbeit I cannot ouerflipp some without manifelt iniury, that deferue to haue their names enrolled in the firft rancke of valiant Confuters: worthy men, but subiect to imperfections, to errour, to mutuall reproofe; some more, some leffe, as the manner is. Harding, and Iewell, were our Eſchines, and Demofthenes: and ſcarſely any language in the Chriſtian world, hath afforded a payre of aduerſaries, equiualent to Harding, and Iewell; two thundring and lightning Oratours in diuinity: but now at laſt infinitely ouermatched by this hideous thunderbolt in humanity; that hath the onely right tearmes inuectiue, and triumpheth ouer all the ſpirites of Contradiſtion. You that haue read Luther againſt the Pope: Sandolet, Longolius, Omphalius, Oforius, againſt Luther: Caluin againſt Sadolet: Melanchthon againſt Longolius: Sturmius againſt Omphalius: Haddon againſt Oforius: Baldwin againſt Caluin: Beza againſt Baldwin: Eraſtus againſt Beza: Trauers againſt Eraſtus: Sutcliff againſt Trauers: and ſo forth: (for there is no ende of endleſſe controuerſies: nor Bellarmine ſhall euer ſatisfy the Proteſtantes: nor Whittaker contente the Papiſtes:

nor Bancroft appease the Precifians: nor any reason pacify affection: nor any authority resolute obstinacy :) you that haue most diligently read these, and these, and fundry other, reputed excellent in their kindes, cast them all away, and read him alone: that can schoole them all in their tearmes inuectiue, and teacheth a new-found Arte of confuting, his all-onely Arte. Martin himselfe but a meacocke: and Papp-hatchet himselfe but a milkesop to him: that inditeth with a penne of fury, and the incke of vengeance; and hath cartloades of paper-shot, and chain-shot at commaundement. Tush, no man can blason his Armes, but himselfe. Behold the mighty Champion, the dubble sword-bearer, the redowtable fighter with both handes, that hath robbed William Conquerour of his furname, and in the very first page of his Straunge Newes, choppeth-off the head of foure Letters at a blow. Hee it is, that hath it rightly in him indeede; and can roundly doe the feate, with a witnesse. Why, man, he is worth a thousand of these pidlinge and driblinge Confuters, that sitt all day buzzing vpon a blunt point, or two: and with much adoe drisle out as many sentences in a weeke, as he will powredowne in an howre. It is not long, since the goodlyest graces of the most-noble Commonwealthes vpon Earth, Eloquence in speech, and

Ciuility in manners, arriued in these remote parts of the world: it was a happy reuolution of the / heauens, and worthy to be chronicled in an English Liuy, when Tiberis flowed into the Thames; Athens remoued to London; pure Italy, and fine Greece planted themselues in rich England; Apollo with his delicate troupe of Muses, forsooke his old mountaines, and riuers; and frequented a new Parnáffus, and an other Helicon, nothinge inferiour to the olde, when they were most solemnly haunted of diuine wittes, that taught Rhetorique to speake with applause, and Poetry to sing with admiration. But euen since that flourishing transplantation of the daintiest, and sweetest lerning, that humanitie euer tasted; Arte did but springe in such, as Sir Iohn Cheeke, and M. Afcham: & witt budd in such, as Sir Phillip Sidney, & M. Spencer; which were but the violetes of March, or the Primerofes of May: till the one begane to sprowte in M. Robart Greene, as in a sweating Impe of the euer-greene Laurell; the other to blossome in M. Pierce Pennileffe, as in the riche garden of pore Adonis: both to growe to perfection, in M. Thomas Nashe; whose prime is a haruest, whose Arte a misterie, whose witt a miracle, whose stile the onely life of the presse, and the very hart-blood of the Grape. There was a kind of smooth, and clenly, and neate, and fine elegancy

before : (proper men, handsome giftes :) but alacke, nothinge liuelie, and mightie, like the braue *vino de monte*, till his frisking penne began to playe the Sprite of the buttry, and to teach his mother-tongue such lusty gambolds, as may make the gallantest French, Italian, or Spanish gagliards to blushe, for extreame shame of their ideot simplicitie. The difference of wittes is exceeding straung, and almost incredible. Good lord, how may one man passe a thousand, and a thousande not compare with one? Arte may giue out precepts, and directoryes / in *communi forma*: but it is superexcellent witt, that is the mother pearle of precious Inuention; and the goulden mine of gorgeous Elocution. Na, it is a certaine pregnant, and liuely thing without name, but a queint mistery of mounting conceit, as it were a knacke of dexterity, or the nippitaty of the nappiest grape, that infinitely surpasseth all the Inuention, and Elocution in the world; and will bunge Demosthenes owne mouth with new-fangled figures of the right stampe, maugre all the thundering, and lightninge Perioodes of his eloquentest orations, forlorne creatures. I haue had some prettie triall of the finest Tuscanisme in graine; and haue curiously obserued the cunningest experiments, and brauest complements of aspiring emulation: but must geeue the bell of singularity, to the humorous witt; and the gar-

land of victory, to the *dominiering Eloquence*. I come not yet to the Praise of the olde Affe: it is young Apuleius, that feedeth vpon this glory: and hauing enclosed these rancke commons, to the proper vse of himselfe, & the capricious flocke; adopteth whom he listeth, without exception: as Alexander the great, had a huge intention, to haue all men his subiectes, and all his subiectes called Alexanders. It was strange newes for some, to be so affected: and a worke of Supererogation for him, so bountifully to vouchsafe his golden name: the appropriate cognifance of his noble stile. God-night poore Rhetorique of sorry bookes: adieu good old Humanity: gentle Artes, and Liberrall Sciences content your selues: Farewell my deere moothers, sometime flourishing Vniuersities: some that haue long continued your sonnes in Nature; your apprentises in Arte; your seruantes in Exercise; your louers in affection; and your vassalles in duety: must either take their leaues of their sweetest freendes; or become / the slaues of that dominiering eloquence, that knoweth no Art but the cutting Arte; nor acknowledgeth any schoole, but the Curtisan schoole. The rest is pure naturall, or wondrous supernaturall. Would it were not an infectious bane, or an incroching pocke. Let me not bee mistaken by sinister construction, that wreateth and wrigleth euery fillable

to the worst. I haue no reference to my selfe ; but to my superiours by incomparable degrees. To be a Ciceronian, is a flowing stocke : poore Homer, a wofull wight, may put his finger in a hole, or in his blind eye : the excellentest histories, and woorthiest Chronicles, (inestimable monumentes of wifdome, and valour,) what but stale Antickes? the flowers, and fruites of delicate humanity, that were wont to be dainetily and tenderly conferued, now preferued with dust, as it were with sugar, and with hoare, as it were with hoony. That frisking wine, & that liuely knacke in the right capricious veine, the onely booke, that holdeth-out with a countenance ; and will be heard, when woorme-toungued Oratours, dust-footed Poets, and weatherwise historians shall not bee allowed a woord to cast at a dogg. There is a fatall Period of whatfoeuer wee terme flourishinge : the worlde runneth on wheelles : and there must be a vent for all thinges. The Ciceronian may sleepe, til the Scogginist hath plaid his part : One sure Conny-catcher, woorth twenty Philosophers : A phantasticall rimester, more vendible, then the notablest Mathematician : no profession, to the faculty of rayling : all harsh, or obscure, that tickleth not idle phantasies with wanton dalliance, or ruffianly iestes. Robin Good-fellow the meetest Autor for Robin Hoodes Library : the

leffe of Cambridge, or Oxforde, the fitter to
 compile woorkes of Supererogation: and wee
 that were simply trayned after the / Athenian, and
 Romane guife, must bee contente to make roome
 for roisters, that know their place, and will take it.
 Titles, and tearmes are but woordes of courfe: the
 right fellow, that beareth a braine, can knocke
 twenty titles on the head, at a ftroke; and with
 a iugling shift of that fame inuincible knacke,
 defende himfelfe manfully at the Paper-barre.
 Though I be not greatly employed, yet my
 leifure will fcarfely ferue, to moralize Fables of
 Beares, Apes, and Foxes: (for fome men can
 giue a shrewd gefse at a courtly allegory:) but
 where Lordes in exprefse tearmes are magnifically
 contemned, Doctours in the fame ftile may be
 courageoufly confuted. Liberty of Tounge, and
 Pen, is no Bondman: nippitaty will not be tied
 to a poft: there is a cap of mainetenaunce, called
 Impudency: and what fay to him, that in a super-
 abundaunce of that fame odd capricious humour,
*findeth no fuch want in England as of an Aretine,
 that might strip thefe golden Affes out-of their gay
 trappings, and after he had ridden them to death
 with rayling, leaue them on the dunghill for carrion?*
 A frolicke mind, and a braue fpirite to bee em-
 ployed with his stripping instrument, in fupply
 of that onely want of a diuine Aretine, the

great rider of golden Asses. Were his penne as supererogatory a woorkeman, as his harte; or his lines such transcendentes, as his thoughtes: Lord, what an egregious Aretine should we shortly haue: how excessiuely exceeding Aretine himselfe; that bestowed the surmountingest amplifications at his pleasure, and was a meere Hyperbole incarnate? Time may worke an accomplishment of woonders: and his graund intentions seeme to prognosticate no lesse, then the vttermost possibilities of capacity, or fury extended: would God, or could the Diuell, giue him that vnmeasurable allowance of witt, and Arte, that he extreamely/affecteth, and infinitely wanteth, there were no encounter, but of admiration, and honour. But it may very-well befeeme me to conceale defectes: and I were best to let him runne out his iolly race, and to attende hys pleasure at all assayes, for feare hee degrade mee, or call mee a Letter-monger. Oh, would that were the worst. Gallant Gentlemen, did you euer see the blades of two brandished swordes in the handes of a Fury? See them now: and Lo how the victorious Duellist stretcheth-out the armes of his Prowesse, to runne vpon those poore Letters with a maine carreere. *Aut nunc, aut nunquam*: now the deadly stroke must be stricken: now, now he will surely lay about him, like a lusty throssher, and beate all to powder, that commeth

in the mighty fwinge of his dubble flayle. But I know not what astonifhing terror may bedimm my fight: and peraduenture the one of thofe vnlawfull weapons is no fword, but a fhaken firebrand in the hand of Alecto. All the worfe: and he twice wobegon poore foule, that is at once affaulted with Fier, and Iron, the twoo vnmercifull instrumentes of Mars enraged. God fhield quiet men from the handes of fuch cruell Confuters: whose argumentes are fwoordes; whose sentences, murthuring bullets; whose phrafes, crofbarres; whose tearmes no leffe, then serpentine powder; whose very breath, the fier of the match: all exceedingly fearefull, faue his footing, which may haply giue him the flipp. Hee that standeth vppon a wheele, let him beware he fall not. I haue heard of fome feate Strata-gems, as fly, as the flyeft in Frontine, or Polyen: & could tell you a pretty Tale of a flippery ground, that woulde make fome bodies eares glow: but hee that reuealeth the fecrete of his owne aduauntage, may haue fcope enough to befrew himfelfe. The Ægyptian Mercury would prouide / to plant his foote vpon a fquare; and his Image in Athens was quadrangular, whatfoeuer was the figure of his hatt: and although he were fometime a Ball of Fortune, (who can affure himfelfe of Fortune?) yet was he neuer a wheele of folly, or an eele of Ely. The glibbest tunge muft

consult with his witt ; & the roundest head with his feete : or peradventure hee will not greatly thanke his tickle deuise. The Wheelewright may bee as honest a man, as the Cutler : the Drawer, as the Cutter : the Deuise, as the Printer : the worst of the six, as the Autor : but some tooles are false Prophets ; and some shoppes fuller of sophistry, then Aristotles Elenches, and if neuer any witty deuise did suddely vndermine himselfe, good enough. I can tell you, the Wheele was an auncient Hieroglyphique of the most-conning Ægyptians ; & figured none of their highest mysteries of triumph, or glory. But when againe I lift-up mine eyes, and behold the glorious picture of that most-threatning Slafter : is it possible, so couragious a Confuter, should bee lesse terrible, then the Basiliske of Orus Apollo, that with his onely hissing, killed the poore snakes, his neighbours ? can any Letters liue, that hee will slay ? Were not Patience, or Submission, or any course better, then farther discourse ? what fonder businesse, then to trouble the Printe with Pamphlets, that cannot possibly liue, whiles the Basiliske hisseth death ? Was I wont to iest at Eldertons ballatinge ; Gascoignes sonnettinge ; Greenes pamphletting ; Martins libelling : Hollinsheds engrosing ; some-bodies abridging ; and whatchicantes translating : & shall I now become a scribbling

Creature with fragmentes of shame, that might long sithence haue beene a fresh writer with discourfes of applaufe? The very whole matter, what but a thinge of nothinge? the Methode, what but a hotchpot / for a gallimafry? by the one, or other, what hope of publike vfe, or priuate credite? Socrates minde could as lightly digeft poifon, as Mithridates boddy : and how eafely haue the greateft stomackes of all ages, or rather the valiantest courages of the worlde, concocted the harfheft, and rankeft iniuries? Politique Philip, victorious Alexander, inuincible Scipio, triumphant Cæfar, happy Auguftus, magnificent Titus, and the flower of the nobleft mindes, that Immortality honoureth, with a sweete facility gaue many bitter reprehensions the flip, and finely ridd their handes of roughest obloquies. Philosophy profeffeth more: and the Philofopher of Emperours, or rather the Emperour of Philofophers, Marcus Antoninus, when hee deserued beft, could with a felicity heare the woort. Cherrish an inward contentment in thy felfe, my minde : and outward occurrences, whome they will not make, fhall not marre. It is as great a prayfe, to be difcommended of the difhoneft, as to be commended of the vertuous : fay, affirme, confirme, approoue, iuftify what you can, the Captaine-scolde hath vowed the laft word : none fo bolde to aduenture any thinge, as he that

hath no good thinge to loofe: let him forge, or coyne, who will beleue him? Lay-open his vanity, or foolery, who knoweth it not? yet who fo eager to defende, or offende, with tooth, or nayle, by hooke or crooke? The Arte of figges, hadd euer a dapper witt, a deft conceite, a flicke forhead, a smugg countenance; a ftinginge tongue; a nippinge hande; a bytinge penne; and a bottomleffe pitt of Inuention, ftored with neuer-fayling shiftes of counterfeite cranckes: and my betters by many degrees, haue bene faine to bee the Godfonnes of young Apuleius. Diuers excellent men haue prayfed the old Affe: giue the young Affe leaue to praife himfelfe, / and to practife his minion Rhetorique vppon other. There is no dealinge, where there is no healinge. To ftrive with dirt, is filthy: to play with edged tooles, daungerous: to trie masteries with a desperate aduerfary, hazardous: to encounter Demofthenes Viper, or Apolloes Bafiliske, deadly. To intende your owne intentions with an inuiolable confancy, and to leuell continually at your owne determined fcope, without refpecte of extrauagant endes, or cumberfome interruptions: the beft courfe of proceeding, and onely firme, cheerefull, gallant and happy refolution. Euery by-way, that ftrayeth or gaddeth from that direct Path, a wandring error: and a perillous or threatninge by-way, a

✓ forreft of wilde beaftes. Handle, touch not the
 ranckeling byle; and throw away the launcing
 inftrument.

I could conceiue no leffe, then thus, and thus,
 when I beganne firft to furuiew that brauing
 Empreffe: and euer me thought, *Aut nunc, aut
 nunquam*, feemed to prognoficate greate tempeftes
 at hande, and euen fuch valorous workes of
 Supererogation, as would make an employed man
 of Florence, or Venice, to breake day with any
 other important bufineffe of ftate, or traffique. I
 went on, & on, ftill, and ftill loking for thofe
 prefaged woondermentes: & thought it Platoes
 great yeare, till I hadd runne-thorough the armed
 pikes, and felte the whole dinte of the two
 vengeable vnlawfull weapons. But I belecue,
 neuer poore man found his Imagination fo hugely
 mocked, as this cōfuting Iugler coofened my
 expectation without meafure: as if his whole
 drift had bene nothinge elfe, but with a pleafurable
 Comedy, or a mad Stratagem, (like thofe of
 Bacchus, and Pan) quaintely deuifed to defeate
 the opinion of his credulous reader, and to furprife
 fimple minds with a moft vnlikely / euent. A fine
 peece of conueiance in fome pageantes: and a
 braue defeigne in fitt place. Arte knoweth the
 pageants: and pollicy the place. In ernest, I
 expected nether an Oratour of the Stewes: nor a

Poet of Bedlam : nor a knight of the alehowse : nor a quean of the Cuckingstole : nor a broker of baggage stiffe : nor a pedler of straunge newes : nor anye base trumperye, or meane matters, when Pierce should racke his witt, and Penniles stretch-out his courage, to the vttermoſt extent of his poſſibility. But without more circumlocution, pryde hath a fall : and as of a A Catt, ſo of Pierce himſelfe, howſoever inſpired, or enraged, you can haue but his ſkinne, puffed vp with winde, and bumbasted with vanitye. Euen when he ſtryueth for life, to ſhewe himſelfe braueſt in the flaunt-aflaunt of his courage ; and when a man would verily belecue he ſhould nowe behold the ſtately perſonage of heroicall Eloquence face to face ; or ſee ſuch an vnſeene Frame of the miracles of Arte, as might amaze the heauenly eye of Astronomy : holla fir, the ſweete Spheres are not too prodigall of their ſoueraine influences. Pardon mee S. Fame. What the firſt pang of his diuine Furie, but notable Vanitie : what the ſecond fitte, but woorthy vanity ? what the thirde career, but egregious vanity ? what the glory of his ruffian Rhetorique, and curtifan Philoſophy, but excellent villany ? That, that is Pierces Supererogation : and were Penniles a perſon of any reckon- ing, as he is a man of notorious fame, that, that perhaps, in regard of the outragious ſingularity,

might be supposed a Tragically, or Heroically villany, if euer any villany were so intituled. The present consideration of which singularity, occasioneth me to bethinke me of One, that this other day very soberly commended some extraordinary giftes in Nashe : and when he had grauelly maintayned, that in the resolution of his conscience, he was such a fellowe, as some wayes had few fellowes ; at last concluded somewhat more roundly.

Well, my maisters, you may talke your pleasures of Tom Nash ; who yet sleepeth secure, not without preiudice to some, that might be more ielous of their name : but assure your selues, if M. Penniles had not bene deeply plunged in a profound extasse of knauery, M. Pierce had neuer written that famous worke of Supererogation, that now stayneth all the bookes in Paules-churchyard, and setteth both the vniuersities to schoole. Till I see your finest humanitie bestow such a liberall exhibition of conceit, and courage, vpon your neatest wittes ; pardon me though I prefer one smart Pamflet of knauery, before ten blundring volumes of the nine Muses. Dreaming, and smoke amount alike : Life is a gaming, a iugling, a scoulding, a lawing, a skirmishing, a warre ; a Comedie, a Tragedy : the sturring witt, a quintessence of quicksiluer ; and there is noe dead fleshe in affection, or courage. You may discourse of Hermes ascending spirit ; of Orpheus enchating

harpe; of Homers diuine furie; of Tyrtaeus enraging trumpet; of Pericles bounsfinge thunderclaps; of Platos entusiasticall rauishment; and I wott not what maruelous egges in mooneshine: but a flye for all your flying speculations, when one good fellow with his odd iestes, or one madd knaue with his awke hibber-gibber, is able to putt downe twentye of your smuggest artificiall men, that simper it so nicely, and coylie in their curious pointes. Try, whē you meane to be disgraced: & neuer giue me credit, if Sanguine witt putt not Melancholy Arte to bedd. I had almost said, all the figures of Rhetorique must abate me an ace of Pierces Supererogation: and Penniles hath a certayne nimble and climbinge reach of Inuention, as good as a long pole, and a hooke, that neuer fayleth at a pinch. It were vnnaturall, as the sweete Emperour, Marcus Antoninus said, that the fig-tree should euer want iuice. | You that purpose with great summes of studdy, & candles to purchase the worshipfull names of Dunses, & Dodipoles, may closely sitt, or sokingly ly at your bookes: but you that intende to be fine companionable gentlemen, smirkinge wittes, and whipsters in the world, betake yee timely to the liuely praetis of the minion profession, and enure your Mercuriall fingers to frame semblable workes of Supererogation. Certes other rules are fopperies: and they that will seeke cut the Archmystery of the busiest Modernistes, shall

find it nether more, nor lesse, then a certayne pragmaticall secret, called Villany, the verie science of sciences, and the Familiar Spirit of Pierces Supererogation. Coosen not your selues with the gay-nothings of children, & schollers: no priuitie of learning, or inspiration of witt, or reuelation of mysteryes, or Arte Notory, counteruayleable with Pierces Supererogation: which hauing none of them, hath them all, and can make them all Asses at his pleasure. The Book-woorme was neuer but a pick-goose: it is the Multiplying spirit, not of the Alchimist, but of the villanist, that knocketh the naile one the head, and spurreth cutt farther in a day, then the quickest Artist in a weeke. Whiles other are reading, wryting, conferring, arguing, discourfing, experimētting, platforminge, musing, buzzing, or I know not what: that is the spirrit, that with a woondrous dexterity shapeth exquisite workes, and atchieueth puissant exploitēs of Supererogation. O my good frends, as ye loue the sweete world, or tender your deare selues, be not vnmindfull what is good for the aduancemente of your commendable partes. All is nothing without aduancement. Though my experīce be a Cipher in these causes, yet hauing studiously perused the newe Arte-notory, that is, the foresaid supererogation; and hauing shaken so many learned asses by the eares, as it were by the hands: I could say no lesse, and might think more.

Something else was vttered the same time by the same Gentleman, aswell concerning the present state of France, which / he termed the most vnchristian kingdome of the most christian kinge ; as touching certaine other newes of I wott not what dependance : but my minde was running on my halfpenny, and my head so full of the foresaid round discourse, that my hand was neuer quyete, vntill I had altered the tittle of this Pamphlet, and newlie christened it *Pierces Supererogation* : aswell in remembrance of the said discourse, as in honour of the appropriate vertues of *Pierce* himselfe ; who aboue all the writers that euer I knew, shall go for my money, where the currantest forgery, impudency, arrogancy, phantasticaltie, vanity ; and great store of little discretion may go for payment ; and the filthiest corruption of abhominable villany passe vnlaunched. His other miraculous perfections are still in abeyance : and his monstrous excellencies in the predicament of Chimera. The birde of Arabia is longe in hatchinge : and mightye workes of Supererogation are not plotted, & accomplished attonce. It is pittie for so hyperbolicall a conceite, ouer-hawty for the surmounting rage of Tasso in his furious agony, should be humbled with so diminitive a witt ; base enough for Elderton, and the riffe-raffe of the scribbling rascality. I haue

heard of many disparagementes in felowship : but neuer sawe so great Impudency married to so little witt ; or so huge presumption allyed to so petty performance. I must not paint, though hee dawbe. Pontan decipher thy vauntinge Alopantius Aufimarchides anew : and Terence display thy boasting Thrafo anew : and Plautus addresse thy vaine-glorious Pyrgopolinices anew : heere is a bratt of Arrogancy, a gosling of the Printing-houise, that can teach your braggardes to play their partes in the Printe of woonder, & to exploit redowtable workes of Supererogation ; such as neuer were atchieued in Latin, or / Greeke. Which deferue to bee looked-for with such a longing expectation, as the Iewes looke for their kingly Messias : or as I looke for Agrippas dreadfull Pyromachy : for Cardans multiplied matter, that shall delude the force of the Canon : for Acontius perfect Arte of forti-fying little townes against the greatest Battery : for the Iliades of all Courtly Stratagems, that Antony Riccobonus magnifically promifeth : for his vniuerfall Repertory of all Histories, con-tayning the memorable actes of all ages, all places, and all persons : for the new Calepine of all learned, and vulgar languages, written, or spoken, whereof a loud rumour was lately published at Basill : for a generall Pandectes of the

ver. 1. v. 1. n.
 (never more content)

Lawes, and statutes of all nations, and commonwealthes in the worlde, largely promised by Doctor Peter Gregorius, but compendiously perfourmed in his *Syntagma Iuris vniuersi*: for sundry such famous volumes of hugy miracles in the cloudes. Do not such Arch-woondermentes of Supernaturall furniture, deserue arch-expectation? What should the Sonnes of Arte, dreame of the Philofophers Stone, that like Midas, turneth into golde, whatfoeuer it toucheth: or of the foueraine, and diuine Quintessence, that like Esculapius restoreth health to sicknesse; like Medea, youth to Olde-age; like Apollonius, life to death? No Philofophers Stone, or foueraine Quintessence, howfoeuer preciously precious, equiualent to such diuine woorkes of supererogation. O high-minded Pierce, hadd the traine of your woordes, and sentences bene aunfwearable to the retinue of your bragges, and threates, or the robes of your appaurance in person, futeable to the weedes of your ostentation in tearmes: I would surely haue beene the first, that should haue proclaimed you, the most-finguler Secretary of this language, and / the heauenliest creature vnder the Spheres. Sweete M. Afcham, that was a flowing spring of humanity, and worthy Sir Phillip Sidney, that was a flourishing spring of nobility, must haue pardoned me: I would directly haue discharged

my conscience. But you must giue plaine men leaue to vtter their opinion without courtinge: I honor high heads, that stand vpon low feet; & haue no great affection to the gay fellowes, that build vp with their clābring hartes, and pull downe with their vntoward hands. Giue me the man that is meeke in spirit, lofty in zeale: simple in presumption, gallant in endeuour: poore in profession, riche in performance. Some such I knowe, and all such I value highly. They glory not of the golden Stone, or the youthfull Quinteffence: but Industrie is their goulden Stone; Action their youthfull Quinteffence; and Valour their diuine worke of Supererogation. Euerye one may thinke as he listeth; & speake as he findeth occasion: but in my fancy, they are simply the simplest fellows of al other, that boast they will exploite miracles, & come short in ordinarie reckonings. Great matters are no woonders, when they are menaced, or promised with big othes: and small thinges are maruels, when they are not expected, or suspected. I wondred to heare, that Kelly had gotten the Golden Flicce, and by vertue thereof was sodenly aduanced into so honorable reputation with the Emperours maiestye; but would haue woondred more, to haue seene a woorke of Supererogation from Nashe: whose witt must not enter the listes of comparison

with Kelleyes Alchimy: howfoeuer he would seeme to haue the Greene Lion, and the Flying Eagle in a boxe. But Kelley will bidd him looke to the swolne Toade, & the daunsing Foole. Kelly knoweth his *Lutum Sapientiæ*, and vseth his termes of Arte. Silence / is a great misterye: and lowde wordes but a Coweherds horne. He that breedeth mountaynes of hope, and with much adoe begetteth a molehill (shall I tell him a newe tale in ould Inglishe?) beginneth like a mightie Oxe, & endeth like a sory Affe. To atchieue it without ostentation is a notable prayse: but to vaunt it without atcheuement, or to threaten it without effecte; is but a dubble-proofe of a simple witt. Execution sheweth the hability of the man: presumption bewraiethe the vanitie of the mind. The Sunne sayth not; I will thus, and thus displaye my glorious beames, but shineth indeede: the springe braggeth not of gallant flowers, but florisheth indeede: the Haruest boasteth not of plentiful fruit, but fructifieth indeede. Æsops fellowes being asked, what they could doe, answered they could doe any thing; but Æsope making a small showe, could doe much indeede: the Greeke Sophisters knowing nothinge in comparison, (knowledge is a dry water) professed a skill in all thinges; but Socrates knowing in a manner all things, (Socrates was a springing



rocke) professed a skill in nothinge : Lullius, and his sectaryes, haue the signet of Hermes, and the admirable Arte of disputinge infinitely *de omni scibili* ; but Agrippa, one of the vniuersallest schollars, that Europe hath yeelded, and such a one, as some learned men of Germany, France, & Italie, intituled The Omniscious Doctour, Socraticallie declameth against the vanitye of sciences, and for my comforte penneth the Apology of the Affe. Neuer any of these prating vagabundes had the vertuous Elixir, or other important secret : (yet who such monarches for Phisique, Chirurgery, Spagirique, Astrology, Palmastry, naturall & supernaturall Magique, Necromancy, Familiar-spiritshipp, and all profound cunninge, as some of these arrant Impostours?) / hee is a Pythagorean, and a close fellow of his tongue, & pen, that hath the right *magisterium* indeede ; and can dispatch with the finger of Art, that they promis with the mouth of cofenage. They that vaunt, do it not ; & they that pretend least, accomplish most. High-spirited Pierce doe it indeede, that thou crakest in vaine ; and I will honour thy worke, that scorne thy worde. When there was no neede, thy breath was the mouth of *Ætna* ; & like a Cyclops, thou didst forge thunder in Mongibello : now the warring Planet was expected in person, and the Fiery Trigon seemed to giue the Alarme ; *thcu*

talkest of Cattes meat: and Dogges meate enough: and wilt try it out by the teeth at the signe of the Dogs-head in the pot. Oh, what a chatering Monky is here : & oh what a dog-fly, is the dog-farr proued? Elderton would haue answered this geere out-of-cry : or had I the witt of Scoggin, I could say some thing to it : but I looked for Cattes meate in *aqua fortis*, & Dogs meate in Gunpowder ; & can no skill of these termes, steeped in thy mothers gutter, & thy fathers kennel. Na, if you will needes strike it as dead as a dore naile ; and run vpon me with the blade of Cattes meate, & the fierbrond of Dogges meate: I haue doone. Or in case your meaning be, as you stoutely protest, to trounce me after twenty in the hundred, *and to haue about with me, with two staues, and a pyke*, like a tall fellowe of Cracouia : there is no dealing for short weapons. Young Martin was an ould hackster : & had you plaid your maisters prizes in his time, he peradventure durste haue looked those two staues in the face, and would haue desired that pike of some more acquaintance : but Truce keepe me out of his handes, that fighteth furiously with two staues of Cattes meate and a pyke of Dogges meate : and is resolutely bente, the best blood / of the brothers shall pledge him in vineger. Happy, it is noe worfe, then vineger ; a good sawce for Cattes meate, and Dogges meate.

Gentlemen, you that thinke prommiffe a bonde, and vse to performe more, then you threaten ; neuer beleeeue Braggadocio againe for his fake. When he hath done his best, and his worst : trust me, or credit your owne eies, his best Best is but Cattes meate, & his worst Worst but Doggs meate enough. What should I goe circuiting about the bushe? He taketh the shorrest cutt to the wood, and dispatcheth all controuersies in a fewe significant termes : not those of Gunpowder, which would aske some charging, and discharging : but these of dogges-meate, which are vp with a vomit. He that is not so little, as the third Cato from heauen, or the eight wiseman vpon earth, may speake with authority ; and christen me a *Dunse*, a *foole*, an *ideot*, a *dolt*, a *goose-cappe*, an *asse*, and I wot not what, as filthy, as filthy may be. Dogged Impudēcy hath his proper Idiotisme ; & very clarkly schooleth the eares of Modestie, to spell, Fa-fe-fi-fo-fu. Simple wittes would be dealt playnly withall : I stand not vpon coye or nice poyntes ; but am one of those, that would gladlie learne their owne imperfections, errours, and follies, in *speciallissima specie* : Be it knowne vnto all men by these presentes, that Thomas Nashe, from the top of his witte looking downe vpon simple creatures, calleth Gabriell Haruey a *Dunse*, a *foole*, an *ideot*, a *dolt*, a *goose-capp*, an *asse*, and soe

fourth : (for some of the residue, is not to be spoken but with his owne manerly mouth) : but the wise man in printe, should haue doone well in his learned Confutation, to haue shewed particularlie, which woords in my Letters, were the wordes of a Dunse : which Sentences, the sentences of a foole : which Arguments, the arguments of / an Ideot : which Opinions, the opinions of a dolt : which Iudgements, the iudgements of a goose-cap : which Conclusions, the conclusions of an Affe. Eyther this wold be dun, (for I suppose, he would be loth to proue some Affes, that in fauour haue written otherwise, and in reason are to verify their owne testimonies) : or he must be fayne himselfe, to eate his owne Cattes-meate, & Dogges-meat : and swallow-downe a Dunse, a foole, an ideot, a dolt, a goose-cap, an affe in his owne throate ; the proper case of his filthiest excrements, and the sinke of the famous rascal ; that had rather be a Poulcatt with a stinking stur, then a musk-cat with gracious fauor. Pardon me gentle Ciuilitie : if I did not tender you, & disclame impudency, I could do him some peece of right ; & shew him his well fauored face in a Cristall, as true as Gascoignes steele-glas. But *trust him not for a dodkin* (it is his owne request) *if euer I did my Doctores Affes* : which a thousand heard in Oxforde ; and some knew to be done with as little premedita-

tion, as euer such actes were done : (for I answered vpon the questions, that were giuen me by Doctor Cathedræ, but two dayes before; and read my Curfory Lecture with a dayes warning :) or if I be not *A Fawne-guest Messenger betweene M. Christopher Bird*, in whose company, I neuer dined, or supped these six yeares, and *M. Emmanuell Demetrius*, with whom I neuer dranke to this day. Other matters, touching *her Highnesse affabilite toward Schollers*, (so her Maiesties fauour towards mee must bee interpreted :) the *Priuy watch-word of honourable men* in their Letters Commendatory, *euen in the highest degree of praying*, (so our high Chauncellours commendation must bee quallified :) Nashes graue Censure of *Publicke Inuectiues, and Satyres*, (so Harueyes slight opinion of contentious, and feditious Libels must / be crosbitten :) his testimony of *Ciceroes consolation ad Dolabellam*, which he will needes father vpon me in reproch, though his betters will neuer pen such a peec of Latin, whofoeuer wer the Stepp-Tully :) his derision of the most profitable, and valorous *Mathematical Arts*, (whose industrie hath atcheeued woonders of mightier puissance, then the labours of Hercules :) his contempt of *the worthiest persons* in euery faculty, (which he alwayes censureth as his punyes, and vnderlinges :) *his palpable Atheisme, and drinkinge a cupp of Lammeswool to the Lambe*

of God : his gibinge at *Heauen*, (the hauen, where my deceafed brother is arriued,) with a deepe cut out-of his Gramer rules ; *Astra petit difertus* : the very ftarres, are fcarres, where he lifteth : and a hundred fuch, and fuch Particularities ; that requier fum larger Difcourfe ; fhew him to be a youngman of the greeneft fpringe, as beardles in iudgement, as in face ; and as Penniles in witt, as in purfe. It is the leaft of his famous aduentures, that hee vndertaketh to be *Greenes aduocate* : as diuine Plato affayed to defend Socrates at the Bar : and I knowe not whether it be the leaft of his dowtye exploites, that he falueth his frendes credit, as that excellent difciple faued his maifters life. He may declare his deere affection to his Paramour : or his pure honeftye to the world ; or his constant zeale to play the Diuels Oratour : but noe Apology of Greene, like *Greenes grotes-worth of witt* : and when Nash will indeede accomplifh a worke of Supererogation, let him publifh, Nafhes *Penniworth of Difcretion*. If he be learnede, or wifer then other, in fo large an affife, as fould appeare by the reporte of his owne mouth ; it is the better for him : but it were not amiffe, he fould fumtime looke-backe to the budget of Ignorance, and Folly, that hangeth behind him ; as otherwhiles he condefcendeth to glauce / at the fatchell of his grammar bookes. Calumny & her

Calvary
21, v. 40
 coofen-german Impudency, wil not alwaies hould-
 out rubbers: and they neede not greatlie bragge
 of their haruest, that make Phantasie the roote,
 Vanity the stalke, Follye the eare, Penury the cropp,
 and Shame the whole substance of their studdies.
 To be ouer-bould with one, or two, is somethig :
 to be sawcy with many, is much : to spare fewe,
 or none, is odious : to be impudent with all, is
 intollerable. There were fayre playe enough,
 though foule play were debarred : but Boyes,
 fooles, and knaues, take all in snuffe, when the
 variance might be debated in the language of
 Curtesie: and nothing but horfeplay will serue,
 where the colt is disposed to play the iade. Did I
 lift to persecute him in his owne vaine, or were
 I not restrained with respectiue termes of diuine,
 and ciuill moderation : ô Aretin, how pleasurably
 might I canuas the bawling cur, in a tossing sheete
 of paper : or ô Gryfon, who could more easilie
 discouer a new Arte of riding a headstrong beaste?
 But that which Nashe accounteth the brauery of
 his witt, and the dubble creast of his style, I am in
 discretion to cut-of: and in modesty yeeld it his
 onely glorye, to haue the fowlest mouth, that I
 euer sawe, and the strongest breath, that I euer
 fealt. When witty girding faileth, as it pitifully
 fayleth in euery page of that Superarrogatory
 worke : Lord, what odious baggage, what rascal

stuffe, what villanous trumpery filleth-vpp the leafe: and howe egregiously would he playe the vengeable Sycophant, if the conueiance of his Arte, or witt, were in anye measure of proportion, correspondent to his pestilent stomacke? But in the fellest fitt of his Furye, euen when he runneth vpon me with openest mouth, & his Spite like a poysonous toade, swelleth in the full: as if some huge timpany /of witt would presentlye possesse his braine; or some horrible Fiery Spright would flye in my face, and blast me to nothing: then good Dick Tarleton is dead, & nothing aliue but Cattes-meat, & Dogges-meat enough. Na, were it not, that hee hadd dealt politiquely, in prouiding himselfe an autentick fuerty, or rather a mighty protectour at a pinch, such a deuoted freend, and inseparable companion, as Æneas was to Achates, Pylades to Orestes, Diomedes to Vlyffes, Achilles to Patroclus, and Hercules to Theseus: doubtlesse he had beene vtterly vndone. Compare old, and new histories, of farr, & neere countries: and you shall finde the late manner of *Sworne Brothers*, to be no new fashion, but an auncient guise, and heroick order; deuised for necessity, continued for security, and maintayned for proffite, and pleasure. In brauest actions, in weightiest negotiations, in hardest distresses, in how many cases, One man, no-boddy; and a dayly frend, as neces-

fary, as our dayly bread. No treafure, more precious: no bonde, more indefefible: no caſtle, more impregnable: no force, more inuincible: no trueth, more infallible: no element, more needefull; then an entire, & affured associate; euer preſt, aſwell in calamity to comfort, or in aduerſity to relieue, as in proſperity to congratulate, or in aduancemente to honour. Life is ſweet, but not without ſweete ſocietie: & an inward affectionate friend, (as it were *an other The ſame, or a ſecond Selfe,*) the very life of life, and the ſweet-harte of the hart. Naſhe is learned, & knoweth his Leripup. Where was Euryalus, there was Nifus: where Damon, there Pythias: where Scipio, there Lælius: where Apollonius, there Damides: where Proclus, there Archiadas: where Pyrocles, there Muſidorus: where Naſhe, there his Nifus, his Pythias, his Lælius, his Dami/des, his Archiadas, his Muſidorus; his indiuiſible companion, with whoſe puiſſant helpe hee conquereth, whereſoeuer he raungeth. Na, Homer not ſuch an author for Alexander: nor Xenophon for Scipio: nor Virgil for Auguſtus: nor Iuſtin for Marcus Aurelius: nor Liuy for Theodoſius Magnus: nor Cæſar for Selymus: nor Philip de Comines for Charles the fiſt: nor Macchiauell for ſome late princes: nor Aretin for ſome late Curteſans; as his Authour for him; the ſole authour of renowned victorie.

Maruel not, that Erasmus hath penned the Encomium of Folly; or that so many singular learned men haue laboured the commendation of the Ass: hee it is, that is the godfather of writers, the superintendent of the presse, the muster-maister of innumerable bands, the Generall of the great feilde: hee, and Nashe will confute the world. And wher is the Ægles quill, that can sufficiently aduance the first spoiles of their new conquestes? Whist sory pen, and be aduised how thou presume about the highest pitch of thy possibility. Hee that hath christened so many notable authours; censured so many eloquent pennes; enrowled so many worthy garrifones; & encamped so many noble, and reuerend Lordes, may be bould with me. If I be an Ass, I haue company enough: and if I be no Ass, I haue fauour to be enstalled in such company. The name will shortly grow in request, as it somtime florished in glorious Roome: and who then will not sue, to be free of that honorable Company? Whiles they are ridden, I desire not to be spared: when the hott-spurr is away with tyring them, he wil scarcely troble himself with a skin. Or if he do, I may chance acquaint him with a secret indistillation; He that drinketh Oyle of prickes, shall haue much adooe to voide syrup of roses; and he that eateth nettles for pro-uander, / hath a priuiledge to pisse vpon Lillyes

for litter. Poules wharfe honour the memorye of oulde Iohn Hester, that would not sticke with his frende for twentye such experimentes; & would often tell me of *A Magistral Vnguent* for all fores. Who knoweth not that Magistrall vnguent, knoweth nothing: and who hath that magistral vnguent, feareth no gunshott. The Confuter meant to be famous, like Poggius, that altobe-afed Valla, Trapezuntius, and their defendantes, many learned Italians: or might haue giuen a gesse at some possible afterclaps, as good as a prognostication of an after-winter. Though Pierce Penniles, for a spurt were a ranke rider, and like an arrant knight ouerran nations with a carreer; yet Thomas Nashe might haue beene aduised, and in pollicy haue spared them, that in compassion fauoured him; and were vnfaynedlye sory, to finde his miserable estate, aswell in his style, as in his purse, and in his wit, as in his fortune. Some complexions haue much adooe to alter their nature: & Nashe wil carrie a tache of Pierce to his graue, (we haue worse prouerbes in englishe:) yet who seeith not, what apparent good, my Letters haue done him, that before ouercrowed all commers, and goers with like discretion, but nowe forfooth hath learned some fewe handsome termes of respecte, and verye manerly beclaweth a fewe, that he might the more

Poggius

A. & P.

licentiouſly beſmeere one. S. Fame giue him ioye of his blacke, and his white chalke.

Who is not limed with ſome default; or who reddier to confeſſe his own imperfections, then miſelfe? but when in professed hatred, like a mortal feudist, he hath vttered his very vttermoſt ſpite, & wholly diſgorged his rācorous ſtomacke: yet can he not, ſo much as deuife any particular action of trefpas, or obiect any certaine vice againſt me, but onely / one greuouſ crime, called Pumps, & Pātoſles, (which indeede I haue worne, euer ſince I knewe Cambridge,) & his owne deereſt hart-root, Pride: which I proteſt before God, and man, my ſoule in indgment as much deteſteth, as my body in nature lotheth poyſon; or anything abhorreth his deadlye enemy, euen amongſt thoſe creatures, which are found fatally contrary by naturall Antipathy. It is not exceſſe, but defecte of pride, that hath broken the head of ſome mens preferment. Aſpiring mindes can ſoare aloft: and Selfe-conceit, with the countenance of Audacity, the tongue of Impudency, & the hand of Dexterity, preaſeth bouldly into the forwardest throng of the ſhouldring ranke: whiles Diſcretion hath leaſure to diſcourſe, whether ſomedeaſe of Modeſty were meeter for manye, that preſume aboue their condition; and ſome deaſe of Selfe-liking fitter for ſome, that haue felt no greater want, then want

of Pride. It may seeme a rude disposition, that forteth not with the quality of the age: & Pollicy deemeth that vertue a vice, that modesty, simplicitie, that resolutenes, dissolutenes, that conformeth not it selfe, with a supple & deft correspondance to the present time: but no such oxe in my mind, as Tarquinius Superbus: no such calfe, as Spurius Mælius: no such colt, as Publius Clodius; no such Ape, as Lucians Rhetorician, or the Diuels Oratour. Blind ambition, a noble bayarde: proud arrogancy, a goulden Ass: vaine conceit, a gaudy Peacocke: all brauery, that is not effectually, a gay nothing. He vpbraideth me with his own good nature: but where such an insolent braggard, or such a puffing thing, as himselfe? that in magnifying his owne bable, & debasing me, reuileth them, whose bookes, or pantofles he is not worthy to beare. If I be an Ass, what asses were those curteous frendes, those excellent learned men, / those worshipfull, & honorable personages, whose Letters of vnderferued, but singular cōmendation may be shewen? What an ass was this selfe, whē thou didst publish my praise amongst the notablest writers of this realme? or what an Ass art this selfe, that in the spitefullest outrage of thy maddest Confutatiō, dost otherwhiles enterlace some remembrances of more account, then I can acknowledge without vanity, or desier without ambition?

Pollicy & the
of Martin
SV

Epigramme

of Martin



The truth is, I stande as little vpon others commendation, or mine owne titles, as any man in England whosoeuer ; if there be nothing els to solicite my cause : but being so shamefully and intollerably prouoked in the most villanous termes of reproch, I were indeede a notorious insenfate affe, in case I should eyther sottishly neglect the reputation of soe worthy fauorers, or vtterly abandō mine owne credit. Sweet Gentlemen, renowned knightes, and honorable Lordes, be not ashamed of your Letters, vnprinted, or written : if I liue, seeing I must eyther liue in *tenebris* with obloquy, or in *luce* with prooffe ; by the leaue of God, I will prooue miselfe no Affe. I speake not onely to M. Bird, M. Spencer, or Monsieur Bodin, whom he nothinge regardeth : (yet I would his owne learning, or iudgmente were anye way matchable with the worst of the three :) but amongst a number of fundrie other learned, and gallant Gentlemē, to M. Thomas Watson, a notable Poet ; to M. Thomas Hatcher, a rare Antiquary ; to M. Daniel Rogers of the Court ; to Doctor Griffin Floyd, the Queenes profeffour of lawe at Oxforde ; to Doctor Peter Baro a profeffour of diuinity in Cambridge ; to Doctor Bartholmew Clark, late Deane of the Arches ; to Doctor William Lewen, Iudge of the prerogatiue Court ; to Doctor Iohn Thomas Freigius, a famous writer

1441 50, 3

of Germany : to Sir Philip Sidney ; to / M. Secretary Wilfon ; to Sir Thomas Smith ; to Sir Walter Mildmay ; to milord the bishop of Rochester ; to milord Treafurer ; to milord the Earle of Leiceſter: Vnto whoſe worſhipfull and honorable fauours I haue bene exceedingly beholding for letters of extraordinary commendation ; ſuch, as ſome of good experience haue doubted, whether they euer voutfaſed the like vnto any of either vniuerſity. I beſeech God, I may deſerue the leaſt parte of their good opinion, eyther in effectuall prooffe, or in dutifull thankefullneſſe : but how little ſoeuer I preſume of mine owne ſufficiency, (he that knoweth himſelfe, hath ſmal cauſe to conceiue any high hope of low meanes :) as in reaſon I was not to flatter miſelfe with their bountifull commendation : So in iudgement I am not to agreeue miſelfe with the odious detraction of this peſtilent libeller, or any like deſpiteous ſlanderer : but in patience am to digeſt the one with moderation, as in temperance I qualified the other with modeſty. Some would ſay, what is the peeuiſhe grudge of one beggarly rakehell, to ſo honorable liking of ſo many excellēt, & ſome ſingular mē ? but god in heauē, teach me to take good by my aduerſaries inuectiue ; and no harme by my fauourers approbation. It is neither the one, nor the other, that deſerueth euill, or well ; but the thing it ſelfe, that edifieth ;

mea
 11
 11
 11

without which, praise is smoke ; and with which, dispraise is fyre. Let me enioy that essential point : & hauke, or hunt, or fishe after praise, you that list. Many contumelious, and more glorious reports haue passed from Enemies, & Friends, without cause, or vpon smal occasion : that is the onely infamy, that cannot acquit it selfe from guiltinesse ; & that the only honor, that is grounded vpon desert. Other winds of diffamation, want matter to vpholde it ; and other shadowes of glory, lacke / a body to support it. In vnhappinesse they are happy, of whose bad amounteth good ; & in happinesse they vnhappy, whose good proueth bad : as glory eftsoones followeth them, that fly from it, & flyeth from them, that followe it. There is a Terme Probatory, that wil not ly : and commendations are neuer autenticall, vntill they bee signed with the seale of approoued Desert, the only infallible Testimoniall. Desert, (maugre Enuy, the companion of Vertue) Socrates highwaye to Honour ; & the totall summe of Oforius *De Gloria*. I will not enter into Macchiauels discourses, Iouius Elogyes, Cardãs natiuities, Cosmopolites Dialogues, or later Histories in dyuers languages : but some worthelye continue honorable, whom they make dishonorable, & conſtrariwise. Reason hath an euen hande, and dispenfeth to euerye one his right : Arte amplifieth, or extenu-

ateth at occasion : the residue, is the liberality of the pen, or the poyson of the inke : in Logique, Sophistrie ; in law, iniury ; in historie, a fable ; in diuinity, a lye. Horace, a sharpe, and sententious Poet, after his pithy manner, comprizeth much in fewe wordes :

*Falsus honor iuuat, & mendax infamia terret,
Quem nisi mendacem, & mendosum ?*

For mine owne part, I am reasonably resolute both wayes, & stand affraide of phantastically discredited, as I esteeme imaginatiue credit, or a contemplatiue banquet. It fitteth not with the profession of a Philosopher, or the constancie of a man, to carrye the minde of a childe, or an youth, or a woman, or a slaue, or a tyrant, or a beast. That resteth not in my power, to reforme, or alter, I were very vnwise if I should not endure with patience, mitigate with reason, & contemne with pleasure. Onely I can be content in certain behouefull respects, to yeeld a peece of a satisfaction vnto some, that / requier it in affectionate termes : and what honest minde, in case of mortalitie, hath not a care, how the posterity may be informed of him? Other reasons I haue elsewhere assigned : and am here to present a vowe to Humilitie, in detestatiō of that, which my disposition abhorreth.

As for his lewd fuppofals, & imputations of counterfait prayfes, without anye probability of circumftance, or the leaft fufpition, but in his owne vengeable malicious head, the common forge of peftilent furmyzes, and arrant flanders ; they are like my imprifonment in the Fleete of his ftrong Fantasie, and doe but intimate his owne skill in falſifying of euidence, and ſuborning of witneſſes to his purpoſe : he muſeth, as he vſeth ; & the goodwife her mother would neuer haue fought her daughter in the Oouen, if herſelfe had not beene well acquainted with ſuch ſhiftes of cunninge conueiance. He was neuer a *non proficient* in good matters ; and hath not ſtudied his fellowes Arte of Cunnycatching for nothinge. Examine the Printers gentle Preamble before the Supplication to the Diuell : and tell me in good footh, by the verdicte of the Tuchſtone, whether Pierce Penniles commende Pierce Penniles, or no ; and whether that ſory praife of the Authour Thomas Naſhe, be not lothſome from the mouthe of the Printer Thomas Naſhe. In coniectural cauſes I am not to auouch any thinge ; and I mentioned not anye ſuch ſuppoſition before : but the tenour of the ſtyle, & as it were the identitie of the phraſe, together with this newe defcant of his profound inſight into forgery, may after a ſort tel tales out of the tyle *De Secretis non reuelandis* ;

& yeld a certain strong fauour of a vehement presumption. There is pregnant euidence enough, though I leaue probable cōiectures, & violent presumptions wher I found them. His Life daily feedeth his Stile ; and his Stile notoriously bewraieith his Life. But / what is that to me, or the world, howe Nashe liueth ; or howe the poore fellowe his father hath put him to his foisting, and scribling shiftes ; his onely *gloria patri*, when all is done. Rule thy desperate infamous penne ; & bee the sonne of a mule, or the Printers Gentleman, or what thou wilt for me. If thou wilt needs deriue thy pettigree frō the noble blood of the Kilprickes, and Childeberds, kinges of France : what commiffion haue I to fitt vpō Genealogies, or to call nobilitie in question? If thou beist disposed to speake as thou liuest, & to liue like Tonosconcoleros, the famous Babilonian king : in curtesy, or in pollicy forbear one, that is not ouer-hasty to troble himselfe with trobling other. What I haue heard credibly reported, I can yet be cōtent to smother in silence : & nether threaten thee with Tiburne, nor Newgate, nor Ouldgate, nor Counter, nor Fleete, nor any publike penance ; but wishe thy amendment : and dare not be too-fawcy with your good qualities, les[t] you confute my Maistership of Arte, as you haue done my Doctorship of Lawe. Neuer poore Doctorship

was so confuted. The best is, I dote not vpon it ; and would rather be actually degraded, then any way disparage the degree, or derogate from them, that are worthier of it. Rest you quiet ; and I will not onely not strugge with you for a tyle ; but offer here to renounce the whole aduantage of a late inquisition, vpon a clamorous denunciation of S. Fame herselfe : who presumed she might be as bould to play the blab with you, as you were to play the flouen with her. Or if your pen be so ranke, that it cannot stande vpon any ground, but the foile of Calumny, in the muck-yard of Impudency : or your tongue soe laxatiue, that it must vtterly vtter a great horrible deale more then all ; whuist a while : and for your instruction, til some pregnanter / lessons come abrode, I wil breiefely tell you in your eare, A certaine familiar history, of more then one or two breakefastes, where in some eight or nine eggs, & a pound of butter for your pore part, with Gods plenty of other victuals, & wine enough, powred-in by quartes, and pottels, was a scant pittance for an inuincible stomack, two houres before his ordinary. I haue readd of Apicius, and Epicures Philosophy : but I perceauē you meane not to be accounted a Pythagorean, or a Stoique. What? gorge vpon gorge, egges vpon egges, & sack vpō sacke at these yeares? Berlady, Sir Kilpricke, you

muſt prouide for a hott kitchin againſte you growe ould ; if you purpoſe to liue Doctour Pernes, or Doctour Kenols yeares. Such egging and whitling may happen bring you acquainted with the triumphant chariot of rotten egges ; if you take not the better order in tyme, with one, or two of the feuē deadly finnes. I will not offend your ſtomacke with the nice and queint regiment of the dainty Platoniftes, or pure Pythagoreans: fine Theurgy, too-gant and meager a doctrine for the Diuels Oratour: if the Arte Notory, cannot be gotten without faſting, and praying, muchgo-ditch-them that haue it: let phantaſticall, or ſuperſtitious Abſtinence, daunce in the aier, like Ariſtophanes clowdes, or Apuleius witches: your owne method of thoſe deadly finnes, be your Caſtell of Health. No remedy, you muſt be dieted ; & lett-blood in the Cephalica veine of Affes, fooles, doltes, ideots, Dunſes, dodipoules, and ſo fourth infinitely: & neuer truſt me, if you be not as tame-tonged, and barren-witted, as other honeſt men of Lumbardy, & the Low-Cuntries. Tuſhe man, I ſee deeper into thee, then thou ſeeiſt into thyſelfe: thou haſt a ſuperficiall tange of ſome little ſomethinge, as good as nothing ; and a runing witt, as fiſking as any fiſgig, but / as ſhallow as Trumpington foorde, and as flight as the newe workemanſhip of guegawes to pleaſe children, or

of toys to mocke apes, or of trinketts to conquer fauages. Only in that singular veine of asses, thou art incomparable ; and such an egregious arrant foole-munger, as liueth not againe. She knew what she said, that intituled Pierce, the hoggeshead of witt: Penniles, the tospot of eloquence: & Nashe, the verye inuentor of Asses. She it is, that must broach the barrell of thy frisking conceite, and canonise the Patriarke of newe writers.

I will not heere decipher thy vnprinted packet of bawdye, and filthy Rymes, in the nastiest kind: there is a fitter place for that discouery of thy foulest shame, & the whole ruffianisme of thy brothell Muse, if she still prostitute her obscene ballatts, and will needes be a young Curtisan of ould knauery. Yet better a Confuter of Letters, then a counfounder of manners: and better the dogges-meate of Agrippa, or Cattes-meat of Poggius, then the swines-meate of Martial, or goates-meate of Arretine. Cannot an Italian ribald, vomit-out the infectious poyson of the world, but an English horrel-lorrel must licke it vp for a restorative; and attempt to putrify gentle mindes, with the vilest impostumes of lewde corruption? Phy on impure Ganimeds, Hermaphrodits, Neronists, Messalinists, Dodecomechanists, Capricians, Inuentours of newe, or reuiuers of old lecheries, and the whole brood of venereous Libertines, that

knowe no reafon, but appetite, no Lawe but Luftē, no humanitie, but villanye, noe diuinity but Atheifme. Such riotous, and inceftuous humours would be launced, not feasted: the Diuell is eloquent enough, to play his owne Oratour: his Damme an old bawde, wanteth not the broccage of a young Poet: Wanton sprites / were alwayes bufie, & Duke Allocer on his luftye Cocke-horfe, is a whot Familiar: the fonnes of Adam, & the daughters of Eue, haue noe neede of the Serpentes carowfe to fet them agogg: Sodome ftill burneth; and although fier from heauen spare Gomorra, yet Gomorra ftill confumeth itfelfe. Euen amorous Sonnets, in the gallantest and fweetest ciuill veine, are but daintyes of a pleafurable witt, or iunkets of a wanton liuer, or buddes of an idle head: whatfoeuer fprowteth farther, would be lopped. Petrarckes Inuention, is pure Loue it felfe; and Petrarckes Elocution, pure Bewty it felfe: His *Laura* was the Daphne of Apollo, not the Thifbe of Pyramus: a delitious Sappho, not a lasciuious Lais; a fauing Hefter, not a deftroying Helena; a nimph of Diana, not a Curtifan of Venus. Aretines mufe was an egregious bawd, & a haggifhe witch of Theffalia: but Petrarcks verfe, a fine loouer, that learneth of Mercury, to exercife his fayreft giftes in a faire fubieft; & teacheth Wit to be inamored

Medicine
what's it?

Each Son

his

vpon Beautye: as Quickfiluer embraseth gold; or as vertue affecteth honour; or as Astronomy gazeth vpon heauen; to make Arte more excellent by contemplation of excellentest Nature. Petrarck was a delicate man, and with an elegant iudgement graciously confined Loue within the limits of Honour; Witt within the boundes of Discretion; Eloquence within the termes of Ciuility: as not many yeares sithence, an Inglishe Petrarck did, a singular Gentleman, and a sweete Poet; whose verse singeth, as valour might speake; and whose ditty, is an Image of the Sun, voutsafing to represent his glorious face in a clowde. What speake I of one, or two English Paragons? or what should I blason the gallant, and braue meeters of Ariosto, and Taffo, alwayes notable, sometimes admirable? All the noblest Italian, French, and Spanish Poets, haue in their seuerall / Veines Petrarchised, that is, looued wittily, not grosely, liued ciuilly, not lewdly, and written delicioufly, not wantonly. And it is no dishonour for the daintyest, or diuineest Muse, to be his scholler, whom the amiablest Inuention, and bewtifullest Elocution acknowledge their master. All posterity honour Petrarck, that was the harmony of heauen; the lyfe of Poetry; the grace of Arte; a precious tablet of rare conceits, & a curious frame of exquisite workmanship; / nothing but neate Witt, and re-

fined Eloquence. Were the amorous muse of my enemy, such a lively Spring of sweetest flowres, & such a living Haruest of ripest fruits; I would abandon other loues, to dote vpon that most-louely muse, and would debase the Dyamant in comparison of that most Dyamant muse. But out-vpon ranke, & lothsome ribaldry, that putrifie, where it should purify, and presumeth to deflowre the moste flourishing wittes, with whom it comforteth, eyther in familiarity, or by fauour. One Ouid was too-much for Roome; and one Greene too-much for London: but one Nashe more intolerable then both: not bicause his witt is any thing comparable, but bicause his will is more outragious. Ferrara could scarcely brooke Marnardus, a poysonous Phisitian: Mantua hardly beare Pomponatius, a poysonous Philosopher: Florence more hardly tolerate Macchiauel, a poysonous politician: Venice most hardly endure Arretine, a poysonous ribald: had they liued in absolute Monarchies, they would haue seemed vtterly insupportable. Germany, Denmarke, Sweden, Polony, Boemia, Hungary, Moscovy, are no foiles of any such wittes: but neither Fraunce, nor Spaine, nor Turkey, nor any puissant kingdom, in one, or other Monarchy of the old, or new world, could euer abide any such pernicious writers, deprauers of cōmon discipline.

England, since it was Ingland, neuer bred more honorable mindes, more aduenturous hartes, more valorous handes, or more excellent wittes, then of late: it is enough for Filly-folly to intoxicate it selfe, though it be not suffered to defyle the lande, which the water enuironeth, the Earth enritcheth, the aier ensweeteneth, and the Heauen bleffeth. The bounteous graces of God are sowed thicke, but come vp thin: corruption had little need to be / fostred: wantonneffe wilbe a nurse, a bawde, a Poet, a Legend to itselfe: vertue hath much-adoe to hold-out inuicibly her purposed course: Resolution is a forward fellow, and Valour a braue man; but affections are infectious, and appetite must sometime haue his swinge. Were Appetite a loyall subiect to Reason, and Will an affectionate seruant to Wisdom; as Labour is a dutifull vassal to Commodity, and Trauail a flying post to Honour; ô heauens, what exploit of worth, or rather what miracles of excellency, might be atcheued in an age of Pollicy, & a world of Industry. The date of idle vanities is expired: away with these scribbling paltryes: there is another Sparta in hande, that indeede requireth Spartan Temperance, Spartan Frugality, Spartan exercise, Spartan valiancy, Spartan perseuerance, Spartan inuincibility: and hath no wanton leasure for the Comedyes of Athens; nor anye bawdy

howers for the songes of Priapus, or the rymes of Nashe. Had he begun to Aretinize, when Elderton began to ballat, Gascoine to fonnet, Turberuille to madrigal, Drant to versify, or Tarleton to extemporise; some parte of his phantasticall bibble-bables, and capricious panges, might haue bene tollerated in a greene, and wild youth: but the winde is chaunged, & there is a bufer pageant vpon the stage. M. Aschams Toxophilus long sithence shot at a fairer marke: and M. Gascoigne himselfe, after some riper experience, was glad to trye other conclusions in the Lowe Countryes; and bestowed an honorable commendation vpon Sir Humfrye Gilbertes gallant discourse, of a discouery for a newe passage to the East Indyas. But read the report of the worthy Westerne discoueries, by the said Sir Humfry Gilbert: the report of the braue West-Indian voyage by the conduction of Sir Frauncis Drake: the report / of the horrible Septentrionall discoueries by the trauail of Sir Martin Forbisher: the report of the politique discouery of Virginia, by the Colony of Sir Walter Raleigh: the report of fundry other famous discoueryes, & aduentures, published by M. Rychard Hackluit in one volume, a worke of importance: the report of the hoatt wellcom of the terrible Spanishe Armada to the coast of Inglande, that came in glory, and went in

dishonour: the report of the redoubted voyage into Spaine, and Portugall, whence the braue Earle of Effex, and the two valorous Generals, Sir Iohn Norris, and Sir Frauncis Drake returned with honour: the report of the resolute encounter about the Iles Azores, betwixt the Reuenge of Ingland, and an Armada of Spaine; in which encounter braue Sir Richard Grinuile most vigorously & impetuouly attempted the extreamest possibilities of valour and fury: for breuity I ouerskip many excellent Traicts of the same, or the like nature: but reade these, and M. William Borrowghes notable discourse of the variation of the compas, or magneticall needle; annexed to the new Attractiue of Robert Norman Hydrographer: vnto which two, Ingland in some respects is as much beholding, as Spayne vnto Martin Cortes, & Peter de Medina, for the Arte of Nauigation: and when you haue obserued the course of Industry; examined the antecedents, and consequents of Trauail; compared Inglish, and Spanish valour; measured the Forces of both parties; weighed euery circumstance of Aduantage: considered the Meanes of our assurance: and finally found proffit to be our pleasure, prouision our security, labour our honour, warfare our welfare: who of reckoning, can spare anye lewde, or vaine tyme for corrupt pamphlets; or who of

iudgment, will not cry? away with these paultringe
 fidle-fadles. / When Alexander in his conquerous
 expeditions visited the ruines of Troy, and reuolued
 in his minde the valiant actes of the Heroicall
 Woorthies there atchieued; One offered to bring
 his Maiefty, the Harpe of Paris: Let it alone,
 quoth hee, it is the Harpe of Achilles, that must
 serue my turne. Paris vppon his harpe, sang
 voluptuous, & lasciuious Carols: Achilles harpe
 was an instrument of glory, and a quier of diuine
 Hymnes, consecrated to the honour of valorous
 Captaines, and mighty Conquerours. He regarded
 not the dainety Lydian, Iönian, or Æolian Melody:
 but the braue Dorian, and impetuous Phrygian
 Musique: and waged Zenophantus to enflame
 and enrage his courage with the furious notes of
 Battail. One Alexander was a thousand Examples
 of Prowesse: but Pyrrhus, the redoubted king of
 the Epirots, was an other Alexander in tempestuous
 execution: and in a most-noble resolution con-
 temned the Vanities of vnnoble Pastimes: in so
 much that, when one of his Barons asked his
 Maieftie, whether of the twoo Musitians, Charifius,
 or Python, pleased his Highnesse better: Whether
 of the two, quoth Pyrrhus: marry Polysperces
 shall go for my money. He was a braue Captaine
 for the eie, & a fitt Musitian for the eare of
 Pyrrhus. Happy Polysperces, that serued such a

maſter: and happy Pyrrhus that commaunded ſuch a ſeruaunt. Were ſome demaunded, whether Greenes, or Naſhes Pamflets, were better penned: I beleeuẽ they would aunſweare; Sir Roger Williams Diſcourſe of War for Militare Doctrine in Eſſe; and M. Thomas Digges Stratioticos, for Militare Diſcipline in Eſſe. And whiles I remember the Princely care of Gelo, a famous Tyrant of Sicill, (many tyrants of Sicill were very politique) that commaunded his great horſe to be brought into the banquetting houſe, where other / Lordes called for the Harpe, other Knights for the Waites: I cannot forget the gallant diſcourſe of Horſemanſhip, penned by a rare gentleman, M. Iohn Aſtely of the Court: whom I dare intitule our Ingliſh Xenophon; and maruell not, that Pietro Bizzaro, a learned Italian, propoſeth him for a perfect Patterne of Caſtilios Courtier. And thinking vpon worthy M. Aſtely, I cannot ouerpaſſe the like labour of good M. Thomas Blundeuil, without due commendation: whoſe painefull, and ſkillfull bookes of Horſemanſhip, deſerue alſo to be regiſtred in the Catalogue of Xenophontian woorkes. What ſhould I ſpeake of the two braue Knightes, Muſidorus, and Pyrocles, combined in one excellent knight, Sir Philip Sidney; at the remembrance of whoſe woorthy, and ſweete Vertues, my hart melteth? Will you needes haue

a written Pallace of Pleasure, or rather a printed Court of Honour? Read the Countesse of Pembrookes Arcadia, a gallant Legendary, full of pleasurable accidents, and proffitable discourses; for three things especially, very notable; for amorous Courting, (he was young in yeeres;) for sage counselling, (he was ripe in iudgement;) and for valorous fighting, (his soueraine profession was Armes:) and delightfull pastime by way of Pastorall exercises, may passe for the fourth. He that will Looue, let him learne to looue of him, that will teach him to Liue; & furnish him with many pithy, and effectuall instructions, delectably interlaced by way of proper descriptions of excellent Personages, and common narrations of other notable occurrences; in the veine of Salust, Liuy, Cornelius Tacitus, Iustine, Eutropius, Philip de Comines, Guicciardine, and the most sententious Historians, that haue powdred their stile with the salt of discretion, and seasoned their iudgement with the leauen / of experience. There want not some futtle Stratagems of importance, and some politique Secretes of priuitie: and he that would skillfully, and brauely manage his weapon with a cunning Fury, may finde liuely Precepts in the gallant Examples of his valiantest Duellists; especially of Palladius, and Daiphantus; Zelmane. and Amphialus; Phalantus, and Amphialus: but chiefly

of Argalus, and Amphialus ; Pyrocles, and Anaxius; Mufidorus, and Amphialus, whose lusty combats, may seeme Heroicall Monomachies. And that the valour of such redoubted men, may appeere the more conspicuous, and admirable, by comparison, and interview of their contraries; smile at the ridiculous encounters of Dametas, & Dorus; of Dametas, and Clinias; and euer when you thinke vpon Dametas, remember the Confuting Champion, more surquidrous then Anaxius, and more absurd then Dametas: and if I should alwayes hereafter call him Dametas, I should fitt him with a name, as naturally proper vnto him, as his owne. Gallant Gentlemen, you that honor Vertue, and would enkindle a noble courage in your mindes to euery excellent purpose; if Homer be not at hand, (whome I haue often tearmed the Prince of Poets, and the Poet of Princes) you may read his furious Iliads, & cunning Odysses in the braue aduentures of Pyrocles, and Mufidorus: where Pyrocles playeth the dowty fighter, like Hector, or Achilles; Mufidorus, the valiant Captaine, like Pandarus, or Diomedes; both, the famous errant Knightes, like Æneas, or Vlysses. Lord, what would himselfe haue prooued in fine, that was the gentleman of Curtesy, the Esquier of Industry, and the Knight of Valour at those yeeres? Liue euer sweete Booke; the siluer



Image of his gentle witt, and the golden Pillar of his noble courage: and euer notify vnto / the worlde, that thy Writer, was the Secretary of Eloquence; the breath of the Mufes; the hooney-bee of the dayntiest flowers of Witt, and Arte; the Pith of morall, & intellectuall Vertues; the arme of Bellona in the field; the tounge of Suada in the chäber; the spirite of Practise in esse; and the Paragon of Excellency in Print. And now whiles I consider, what a Trompet of Honour, Homer hath bene to sturre-vp many woorthy Princes; I cannot forget the woorthy Prince, that is a Homer to himselfe, a Golden spurre to Nobility, a Scepter to Vertue, a Verdure to the Spring, a Sunne to the day; and hath not onely translated the two diuine Poems of Salustius du Bartas, his heauenly Vransy, and his hellish Furies: but hath readd a most valorous Martial Lecture vnto himselfe in his owne victorious Lepanto, a short, but heroicall worke, in meeter, but royal meeter, fitt for a Dauids harpe. Lepanto, first the glory of Christendome against the Turke; and now the garland of a soueraine crowne. When young Kings haue such a care of their flourishing Prime; and like Cato, are ready to render an accompt of their vacant howers; as if Aprill were their Iuly, and May their August: how should gentlemen of yeeres, employ the golden talent of their Industry, and trauaile?

with what feruency ; with what vigour ; with what zeale, with what incessant, and indefatigable endeouour? Phy vpon fooleries : there be honourable woorkes to doe ; and notable woorkes to read. The afore-named Bartas, (whome elfewhere I haue stiled the Treasurer of Humanity, and the Jeweller of Diuinity) for the highnesse of his subiect, and the maiesty of his verse, nothing inferiour vnto Dante, (whome some Italians preferre before Virgil, or Homer,) a right inspired and enrauisht Poet ; full of chosē, graue, profound, venerable, and stately matter ; euen / in the next Degree to the sacred, and reuerend stile of heauenly Diuinity it selfe. In a manner the onely Poet, whom Vrans hath voutsafed to Laureate with her owne heauenly hand : and worthy to bee alleadged of Diuines, and Counsellours, as Homer is quoted of Philosophers, & Oratours. Many of his solemne verses, are oracles: & one Bartas, that is, one French Salomō, more weighty in stern, and mighty counsell, then the Seauen Sages of Greece. Neuer more beauty in vulgar Languages : but his stile addeth fauour, and grace to beauty ; and in a goodly Boddy representeth a puissant Soule. How few verses carry such a personage of state? or how few argumentes, such a spirite of maiesty? Or where is the diuine instincte, that can sufficiently commend such a volume of celestially inspiration?

What a iudgement hath the noble youth, the haruest of the Spring, the sapp of Apollos tree, the diademe of the Muses, that leaueth the enticingest flowers of delite, to reape the maturest fruites of wisedome? Happy plants, that speedily shewfoorth their generous nature : and a soueraigne good possesseth those worthy mindes, that suffer not their affections to be inueigled, or entangled with any vnworthy thought. Great Exercises become great perfonages : as the Magnes approueth his Nobility in commaunding Iron, and taming the Sea : baser, or meaner pastimes belong vnto meaner Persons ; as Iett discouereth his gentry, in drawing chaffe, haire, and such trifles. A meete qualitie for Iett, or a pretty feate for Amber, to iuggle chaffe, festues, or the like weighty burdens : but excellent mindes are employed, like the noble Magnes, and euer conuerfant either in effecting, or in perusing, or in penning excellent workes. It were an impossible attempte, to do right vnto the great Captaine, Monsieur de la Noë, and the / braue soldiour, the French King himselfe, two terrible thunderboltes of warre, and two impetuous whirlwinds of the Field : whose writings are like their actions, resolute, effectually, valiant, politique, vigorous, full of aëry, & fiery spirite, honourable, renowned wherefoeuer Valour hath a mouth, or Vertue a pen. Could the Warlie

Horfe speake, as he can runne, and fight, he would tell them, they are hoat Knightes: and could the bluddy Sword write, as it can sheare, it would dedicate a volume of Fury vnto the one, and a monument of Victory vnto the other. Albeit men should be malicious, or forgetfull, (Spite is malicious, and Ingratitude forgetfull) yet Prowesse hath a Clouen Tounge; and teacheth Admiracion in a fiery language to pleade the glorious honour of emproued valiancy.

Some accuse their destiny; but blessed Key, that openeth such lockes: and lucky, most lucky fortune, that yeeldeth such vertue. Braue Chualry, a continuall witnesse of their valour and terribility in warre: and gallant Industry the dayly bread of their life, in peace, or truce. Report shining Sunne, the dayes-worke of the King: and burning Candle, relate his Nightes-studdy: and both ridd me of an endlesse labour. For who euer prayed the wonders of Heauen?

And what an infinite course were it, to runne thorough the particular commendations of the famous redoubted actors, or the notable pregnant writers of this age, euen in the most-puissant Heroicall, and Argonauticall kinde?

Nimble Entelechy hath bene a straunger in some Countries: albeit a renowned Citisen of Greece; and a free Denisen of Italy, Spaine, Fraunce, and

Germany : but wellcome the most-naturall inhabitant of the world ; the faile of the ship, the flight of the bowe, the shott of the gunne, the / wing of the Eagle, the quinteffence of the minde, the course of the sunne, the motion of the heauens, the influence of the starres, the heate of the fire, the lightnesse of the Ayer, the swiftnesse of the winde, the streame of the water, the frutefulnessse of the Earth, the singularitie of this age : and thanke thy most-vigorous selfe for so many precious workes of diuine furie, and powerable consequence ; respectiueley comparable with the richest Treasuries, and braueft armories of Antiquitie. Thrife-happie, or rather a thousand times-happie Creature, that with most aduantage of all honorable opportunities, & with the extremest possibilitie of his whole powers, inward, or outward, emploie the most-excellent excellencie of humane, or diuine Nature. Other Secretes of Nature, and Arte, deserue an high reputation in their feuerall degrees, and may challenge a fouerain interteinement in their speciall kinds : but Entelechy is the mysterie of mysteries vnder heauen, and the head-spring of the powerullest Vertues, that diuinitie infuseth, humanitie imbraceth, Philosophie admireth, wisdome practifeth, Industrie emproueth, valour extendeth ; or he conceiued, that conceiuing the wonderfull faculties of the

mind, & astonished with the incredible force of a rauished, & enthufiafticall fpirite ; in a profound contemplation of that eleuate, and transcendent capacitie, (as it were in a deepe ecftafie, or Sera-phicall vifion,) moft-pathetically cryed-out ; *ô magnum miraculum Homo*. No maruel, ô great miracle, & ô moft powerful Entelechy, though thou feemift A Pilgrim to Dametas, that art the Familiar Spirite of Mufidorus : & what wöder, though he empeach thy eftimation, that defpifeth the graces of God, flowteth the conftellations of heauē, frumpeth the operations of nature, mocketh the effectualleft & auayllableft Arts, difdayneth / the name of Induftrie, or Honefty, fcorneth whatfoeuer may appeare Vertuous, fawneth onely vpon his owne conceits, claweth only his owne fauorits, and quippeth, bourdeth, girdeth, affeth the excellēteft writers of whatfoeuer note, that tickle not his wāton fenfe. Nothing memorable, or remarkable with him, that feafteth not the riotous appetite of the ribald, or the humorous conceit of the phātaft. It is his S. Fame, to be the infamy of learning : his reformatiō, to be the corruption of his reader : his felicitie, to be the miferie of youth : his health, to be the fcurfe of the Citie, the fcabbe of the Vniuerfitie, the bile of the Realme : his faluation, to be the damnation of whatfoeuer is termed good, or accounted honeft. Sweet Gentlemen, and flourish-

ing youthes, euer aime at the right line of Arte and Vertue, of the one for knowledge, of the other for valour: and let the crooked rectifie itselfe. Resolution wandreth not, like an ignorant Traueller, but in euery enterprise, in euery affaire, in euery studdie, in euery cogitation leuelleth at some certaintie; and alwayes hath an eye to Vse, an eare to good report, a regard to worth, a respect to assurance, and a reference to the end. He that erreth, erreth against Truth, and himselfe: and he that finneth, finneth against God, and himselfe: he is none of my charge: it suffiseth me to be the Curate of myne owne actions, the master of mine owne passions, the friend of my friends, the pittyer of my enemies, the loouer of good witts, and honest mindes, the affectionate seruant of Artes, & Vertues, the humble Oratour of noble Valour, the Commender of the foresaid honorable writings, or any commendable workes. Reason is no mans tyrant: & Dutie euery mans vassall, that deserueth well. Would this pen were worthy to be the slaue of the worthiest actours, or the bondman of the / aboue mentioned, and the-like important Autours.

Such Mercuriall, and Martiall Discourses, in the actiue, and chiualous veine, pleade their owne eternall honour: and write euerlasting shame in the forehead of a thousand friuolous, & ten thousand phantasticall Pamflets. I would to Christ,

ideal
knowledge
was

some of them were but idle toys, or vayne trifles : but impuritie neuer presumed somuch of impunitie : and licentious follie by priuiledge, lewd ribaldrie by permission, and rank villanie by conniuance, are become famous Autours: not in a popular state, or a petty-principalitie, but in a souerain Monarchie, that tendereth politique gouernment, & is to fortifie itselfe against forein hostilitie. If Wisdome say not, Phie for shame ; & Autoritie take not other order in conuenient time : who can tell, what generall plague may ensue of a speciall infection? or when the kinges-euill is past cure, who can say, we will now heale it? The baddest weed groweth fastest : and no Gangrene so pregnantly dispreddeth itselfe, as riott. And what riott so pestiferous, as that, which in sugred baites presenteth most poisonous hookes? Sir Skelton, and Master Scoggin, were but Innocents to Signior Capricio, and Monsieur Madnesse : whose pestilent canker scorneth all the Medicine of Earth, or heauen.

My writing, is but a priuate note for the publike aduertisemēt of some fewe : whose youth asketh instruction, & whose frailtie needeth admonition. In the cure of a canker, it is a generall rule with Surgeōs : It neuer perfectly healeth, vnlesse the rootes and all be vtterly extirped ; and the fleshe regenerate. But the soundest Principle is: *Prin-*

cipijs obsta : & it goeth best with them, that neuer knewe, what a canker, or leper meant.

I still hoped for some graffes of better fruite : but this graund / Confuter of my Letters, and all honestie, still proceedeth from worse to worse, from the wilding-tree to the withie, from the dogge to the goate, from the catt to the fwine, from Prime-rose hill to Colman hedge : and is so rooted in deepe Vanitie, that there is no ende of his profound follie. Which deserueth a more famous Encomiasticall Oration, then Erasmus renowned Follie : and more gloriously disdaineth any cure, then the Goute. I may answer his hoat rauing in cold termes : and conuince him of what notorious falsehood, or villanie I can : but see the frake spirite of a full stomack : & who euer was so parlously matched? Were not my simplicitie, or his omnifufficiencie exceeding great ; I had neuer bene thus terrible ouer-challenged. *Gabriel, if there be any witt, or industrie in thee, now I will dare it to the vttermost : write of what thou wilt, in what language thou wilt, and I will confute it, and answer it. Take Truthes part, & I will prooue truth to be no truth, marching out of thy dounge-voiding mouth : & so forth in the brauing tenour of the same redoubtable stile.* Good Gentlemen, you see the sweet dispositiō of the man ; & neede no other window into the clofet of his cōscience, but his owne Glossē

vpon his owne Text. Whatsoever poore I say, in any matter, or in any language, albeit Truth auerr and iustifie the same, he will flatly denie, and confute, euen bicause I say it; & onely bicause in a frolick and dowie iollitie, he will haue the last word of me. His Grammer, is his Catechisme; *Si ais, nego*: his stomach, his Dictionarie in any language: and his quarrell, his Logique in any argument: *Lucian, Iulian, Aretin, I protest were you ought else but abhominable Atheists, that I would obstinately defende you, onely bicause Laureate Gabriel articles against you.* Were there not otherwise a marvelous odde, and incomprehensible difference betwixt our habilities, he would neuer dare me, like a bold Pandare, with such stout challenges, and glorious protestations: but singular wittes haue a great aduantage of simple men: and cunning Falshood is a mightie confuter of plaine Truth. No such champion, as he that fighteth obstinately with the target of Confidence, and the long-sword of Impudence. If any thing extraordinarily emprooueth valour, it is Confidence: and if any thing miraculously singularizeth witt, it is Impudence. Distrust, is a naturall foole: and Modestie, an artificiall foole: he that will exploit wödermentes, and karrie all before him, like a sweepe-stake, must haue a hart of Iron, a forehead of Brasse, and a toung of Adamant.

1. 111
Lucian, Iulian, Aretin, I protest were you ought else but abhominable Atheists, that I would obstinately defende you, onely bicause Laureate Gabriel articles against you.
protestations
)

Pelting circumstances, marre braue executions : looke into the proceedinges of the greateft doers ; and what haue they more then other men, but Audacitie, and Fortune ?

Audendum est aliquid, Vinculis, & carcere dignum, Si vis esse aliquid. Simplicitie may haue a gesse at the Principles of the world : and Nashe affecteth to seeme a compound of such Elementes ; as bold, as æger, and as æger, as a madd dogge. He will confute me, bicause he will : and he can conquer me, bicause he can. If I come vpon him with a gentle reply, he will welcome me with a fierce reioynder : for any my briefe Triplication, he will prouide a Quadruplication at-large : & so forth in *infinitū*, with an vndauntable courage : for he sweareth, *he will neuer leaue me as long as he is hable to lift a penne.* Twentie such famous depofitions proclaime his dowie resolution, and indefatigable hand at a pight field. Were I to begin agayne, or cold I handsomely deuise to giue him the cleanly flipp, I would neuer deale with a sprite of Coleman hedge, or a May-Lord of Primerose hill ; that hath all humours / in his liuerie, & can put conscience in a Vices coate. Na, hee will atchieue impossibilities ; and in contempt of my simplicitie, prooue Truth a counterfaict, and himselfe a true witnesse of falsest lyes. But Lord, that so inuincible a Gentleman should make so solemne

account, of confuting, and reconfuting a perſon of ſo litle worth in his valuation? Sweet man, what ſhould you thinke of troubling your-ſelfe with ſo tedious a courſe, when you might ſo blithly haue taken a quicker order, and may yet proceede more compendiouſly? It had bene a worthy exploit, and beſeeming a witt of ſupererogation, to haue dipped a ſopp in a goblet of *renniſh wine*; and naming it Gabriel, (for you are now growne into great familiaritie with that name) to haue deuoured him vpp at one bit: or taking a *pickle herring* by the throte, and chriſtning it Richard (for you cã chriſten him at your pleaſure) to haue ſwallowed him downe with a ſtomack. Did you neuer heare of deteſtable Iewes, that made a picture of Chriſt; and then buffeted, cuggelled, ſcourged, crucified, ſtabbed, pierced, and mangled the-ſame moſt vnmercifully? Now you haue a patterne, I doubt not but you can with a dexteritie, chopp-of the head of a dead hoony bee, and boaſt you haue ſtricken Iohn, as dead as a doore-nayle. Other ſpoyle, or victorie (by the leaue of the foreſaid redoubted daring) will prooue a buſie peece of worke for the ſonne of a mule, a rawe Gram- marian, a bragging Sophiſter, a counterfait cranke, a ſtale rakehell, a piperly rymer, a ſtump-worne railer, a dodkin autor: whoſe two ſwordes, are like the hornes of an hodmandod; whoſe courage,

like the furie of a gad-bee; and whose furmounting brauerie, like the wings of a butterfly. I take no pleasure to call thee an Assè; but thou proouest thi-felse a Haddock: and although I say not, / Thou art a foole, yet thou wilt needs bewray thy diet, and disgorge thy stomack of the Lobster, and coddeshed, wherewith thou didst englutt thifelse, since thy notorious surfett of pikle herring, and dogfish. Thou art neither *Dorbell*, nor *Duns*, nor *Thomas of Aquine*: they were three sharp-edged, and quickfented schoolemen, full of nimble witt, and intricate quiddities in their arguing kinde, especially *Duns*, and *Thomas*: but by some of thy cauilling *Ergos*, thou shouldst seeme to be the spawne of Iauell, or Tartaret: & as very a crabfish at an *Ergo*, as euer crawled-ouer Carters Logique, or the *Posteriorums of Iohannes de Lapide*. When I looke vpō thy first page (as I daily behold that terrible Emprese for a recreation) still methinkes there should come flushing-out the great Atlas of Logique, and Astronomie, that supported the orbes of the heauens by Art: or the mightie Hercules of Rhetorique and Poetrie, that with certaine maruelous fine, and delicate chaines, drewe after him the vassals of [the] world by the eares. But examin his futtelliest *Ergos*, & tast his nappiest Inuention, or daintiest Elocution, (he that hath nothing else to do, may hold him-

selfe occupied) : and Art will soone finde the huge Behemoth of Conceit, to be the sprat of a pickle herring ; and the hideous Leuiathan of Vainglorie, to be a shrimpe in Witt, a periwinkle in Art, a dandiprat in Industrie, a dodkin in Valu ; and such a toy of toyes, as euery right Schollar hisseth at in iudgement, and euery fine Gentleman maketh the Obiect of his scorne. He can raile : (what mad Bedlam cannot raile ?) but the fauour of his railing, is grosely fell, and smelleth noysomly of the pompe, or a nastier thing. His gayest flourishes, are but Gascoignes weedes, or Tarletons trickes, or Greenes crankes, or Marlowes brauados : his iestes, but the dregges of cōmon scurrilitie, the / shreds of the theater, or the of-scouring of new Pamflets : his freshest nippitatie, but the froth of stale inuentiōs, long-since lothsome to quick tastes : his shrouing ware, but lenten stuff, like the old pickle herring : his lustiest verdure, but ranke ordure, not to be named in Ciuilitie, or Rhetorique : his only Art, & the vengeable drift of his whole cunning, to mangle my sentences, hack my arguments, chopp and change my phrascs, wrinch my wordes, and hale euery fillable most extremely ; euen to the disioynting, and maiming of my whole meaning. O times : ô pastimes : ô mōstrous knauerie. The residue whatsoever, hath nothing more in it, then is vsuallie in euery ruffianly

Copefmate, that hath bene a Grāmar fchollar, readeth riotous bookes, hanteth roifterly companie, delighteth in rude scoffing, & karrieth a desperate minde. Let him be thorowly perused by any indifferent reader whomfoeuer, that can iudiciously difcerne, what is what ; and will vprightly censure him according to his skill, without partialitie *pro*, or *contra* : and I dare vndertake, he will affirme no leffe, vpon the credit of his iudgement ; but will definitiuey pronounce him, the very Baggage of new writers. I could nominate the person, that vnder his hand-writing hath filed him, The cockish challenger, the lewd scribler, the offal of corruptest mouthes, the draff of filthiest pennes, the bag-pudding of fooles, & the very pudding-pittes of the wise, or honest. He might haue read of foure notable thinges, which many a iollie man weeneth he hath at will, when he hath nothing leffe : much knowledge ; found wisedome ; great power ; & many frends. And he might haue heard of other foure speciall thinges, that worke the destruction, or confusion of the forwardest practitioners : a headlong desire to know much hastily ; a greedie thirst to haue much sud / dainly ; an ouerweening conceit of themselues ; and a surly contempt of other. I could peraduēture arread him his fortune in a fatall booke, as verifiable, as peremptorie : but I looue not to insult vpō miserie : & Definie is a

Judge, whose sentence needeth no other execution, but itselfe. No preuention, but deepe repentance ; an impossible remedy, where deepe Obstinacie is grounded, and high Presumption aspireth about the Moone. Hawtie minds may flie aloft, and hasten their owne ouer-throw ; but it is not the wainscott forhead of a Rudhuddibras, that can arreare such an huge opinion, as himselfe in a strong conceit of a mighty conception, seemeth to trauaill withall : as it were with a flying Bladude, attempting wonderments in the Ayre, or a Simon Magus, experimenting impossibilities, from the top of the Capitoll. He must either accomplish some greater worke of Supererogation, with actual atchieuement, (that is now a principall point) : or immortalize himselfe the proudest Vaine fott, that euer abused the world with foppish ostentation ; not in one, or two pages, but in the first, the last, & euery leafe of his Strange Newes. For the end is like the beginning ; the midst like both ; and euery part like the whole. Railing, railing, railing : bragging, bragging, bragging : and nothing else, but fowle railing vpon railing, and vayne bragging vpon bragging ; as rudely, grosely, odiously, filthily, beastly, as euer shamed Print. Vnlesse he meant to sett-vpp a Railing schoole, and to read a publicke Lecture of bragging, as the onely regall profeffour of that, and that facultie, now other

shiftes begin to fayle. I wonder, his owne mouth can abide it without a phah. You haue heard some worthie Premiffes : behold a braue conclusion :

Awaite the world, the Tragedy of Wrath :

What | next I paint, shall tread no common Path :

with an other double *Aut*, for a gallant Embleme, or a glorious Farewell; *Aut nunquam tentes, aut perfice*. Subscribed with his owne hande; *Thomas Nash*. Not expect, or attend, but *a wait* : not some few, or the Citty, or the Vniuersity, or this Land, or Europe, *but the World* : not a Comedy, or a Declamation, or an Inuectiue, or a Satire, or any like Elencticall discourse : but a *Tragedy*, and the very *Tragedy of Wrath*; that shall dash the direfullest Tragedies of Seneca, Euripides, or Sophocles, out of Conceit. *The next peece*, not of his Rhetorique, or Poetry, but of his *Painture*, shall *not treade* the way to Poules, or Westminster, or the Royall Exchange ; but at least shall perfect the Venus face of Apelles, or sett the world an euerlasting Sample of inimitable artificiality. Other mens writing in prose, or verse, may plodd-on, as before ; but *his Painting* will now tread *A rare Path*; and by the way bestow A new Lesson vppon Rhetorique, how to continue a metaphor, or vphold an Allegory with aduauntage. *The tread-*

ing of that rare Path, by that exquisite *Painting*, (his woorkes are miracles; and his *Painting*, can treade, like his dauncing, or frisking, *no common but a proper Path*) who expecteth not with an attentive, a serviceable, a cooetous, a longing expectation? *A wait world*: and Apelles tender thy most affectionate deuotion, to learne a wonderfull peece of curious workmanship, when it shall please his next *Painting* to tread the path of his most singular singularity. Meanwhile it hath pleased foome sweete wittes of my acquaintaunce, (whome Heauen hath baptized the Spirites of harmony, and the Muses haue enterteyned for their Paramours) to reacquite Sonnets with Sonnets, and to snibb the Thrafonicall rimester with Angelical meeter, that may haply / appeare in fitt place: and finely discouer young Apuleius in his ramping roabe; the fourth Furie in his Tragical Pageant; the new Sprite in his proper haunt, or buttry; and the confuting Diuell in the horologe. One She, & two He's haue vowed, they will pumpe *his Railing Inkhorne* as dry, as euer was Holborne Conduit: and squise *his Craking Quill* to as emptie a sponge, as any in Hofier Lane. Which of you, gallāt Gentlemē, hath not stripped *his stale Iestes* into their thredbare ragges; or so seldome as an hundred times pittied his creast-falne stile, & his socket-worne inuention? Who would haue thought,

or could haue imagined, to haue found the witt of Pierce, so starued and clunged : the conceit of an aduerfarie, so weather-beaten, and tired: the learning of a schollar, so pore-blind, and lame: the elocutiō of the Diuels Oratour, so lanke, so wan, so meager, so blunt, so dull, so fordead, so gaffly, where the masculine Furie meant to play his grisliest, and horriblest part? Welfare a good visage in a bad cause : or farwell Hope, the kindest coosener of forlorne harts. The desperate minde, that assayeth impossibilities in nature, or vndertaketh incredibilities in Art, must be cōtent to speed thereafter. When euery attempt faileth in performance, and euery extremitie foileth the enterpriser, at-last euen Impudencie it selfe must be faine to giue-ouer in the plaine felde : and neuer yeeld credit to the word of that most credible Gentlewoman, if the very brafen buckler prooue not finally a notorious Dash-Nash. He summed all in a briefe, but materiall Summe ; that called *the old Assē*, the great A, and the est Amen of the *new Supererogation*. And were I here cōpelled to dispatch abruptly, (as I am presently called to a more commodious exercise) should I not sufficiētly haue discharged my taske ; and plentifully haue cōmended / *that famous creature*, whose prayse the Title of this Pamflet professeth? He that would honor Alexander, may

crowne him the great A. of puiffance : but Pyrrhus, Hanniball, Scipio, Pompey, Cæfar, diuers other mightie Conquerours, & euē fom moderne Worthies would difdaine, to haue him ſceptred the eft-Amen of Valour. What a braue, and incomparable Alexander, is that great A that is alfo the eft-Amen of Supererogatiō; a more miraculous and impoffible peece of worke, thē the dowtieft puiffance, or worthieft valour in the old, or new world? Shall I fay, bleffed, or peereleffe young Apuleius, that from the fwathing bandes of his infancie in Print, was fuckled of the sweeteft nurfes, lulled of the deereft groomes, cockered of the fineft miniōs, cowed of the daintieft paramours, hugged of the enticingeft darlings, and more then tenderly tendered of the moft delitious Mufes, the moft-amiable Graces, and the moft-powerfull Vertues of the ſaid vnmatchable great A. the graund founder of Supererogatiō, and ſole Patron of ſuch meritorious clients. As for other remarkable Particulars in the Straunge Newes; Ink is ſo like Ink, ſpite ſo like ſpite, impudencie ſo like impudencie, brocage ſo like brocage, and Tom-Penniles now, ſo like Papp-hatchet, when the time was; that I neede but ouerrun an old cenſure of the One, by way of new application to the Other. The notes of Martinifme appertaine vnto thoſe, whom they concerne. Pierce would laugh, to be charged with

Martinisme, or any Religion : though Martin himselfe for a challenging, ruffing, and railing stile, not such a Martin. Two contraries ; but two such contraries, as can teach Extremities to play the contraries, and to confound themselves.

Papp-hatchet, desirous for his benefit, to currie fauour with / a noble Earle ; and in defecte of other meanes of Commendatiō, labouring to insinuate himselfe by smooth glosing, & cōūterfait suggestiōs, (it is a Courtly feate, to snatch the least occasionet of aduantage, with a nimble dexteritie) ; some yeares since prouoked me, to make the best of it, inconsideratly ; to speake like a frend, vnfrendly ; to say, as it was, intolerably ; without priuate cause, or any reason in the world : (for in truth I looued him, in hope prayfed him ; many wayes faouored him, and neuer any way offended him) : and notwithstanding that spitefull prouocatiō, and euen that odious threatening of ten yeares prouision, he had euer passed vntouched with any fillable of reuenge in Print, had not Greene, and this dog-fish, abhominably misused the verbe passue ; as should appeare, by his procurement, or encouragement, assuredly most vnderferued, and most iniurious. For what other quarrel, could Greene, or this dogge-fish euer picke with me : whom I neuer so much as twitched by the sleue, before I founde myselfe, and my dearest frendes,

not
winter

vnfufferably quipped in moſt contumelious, and opprobrious termes. But nowe there is no remedie, haue amongeſt you, blind Harpers of the Printing houſe : for I feare not fix hundred Crowders, were all your wittes aſſembled in one capp of Vanitie, or all your galles vnited in one bladder of choler. I haue loſt more labour, then the tranſcripting of this Cenſure : which I dedicate neither to Lord, nor Lady, but to Truth, and Æquitie ; on whoſe ſouerain Patronage I relye.



*An | Aduertisement for Papp-hatchett, and Martin
Mar-prelate.*

PApp-hatchett (for the name of thy good nature is pittifully growen out-of-quest) thy olde acquaintance in the Sauoy, when young Euphues hatched the egges, that his elder freendes laide, (surely Euphues was someway a pretty fellow: would God Lilly had alwaies bene Euphues, and neuer Pap-hatchet;) that old acquaintance, now somewhat straungely saluted with a new remembrance, is neither lubbabied with thy sweete Papp, nor scarre-crowed with thy sower hatchet. And although in felse-conceit thou knowest not thy felse, yet in experience, thou mightest haue knowen him, that can Vnbutton thy vanity, and Vnlase thy folly: but in pittie spareth thy childish simplicity, that in iudgement scorneth thy roisterly brauery; and neuer thought so basely of thee, as since thou began'ft to disguise thy witt, and disgrace thy arte with ruffianly foolery. He winneth not most



abroad that weeneth most at-home : and in my poore fancy, it were not greatly amiffe, euen for the pertest, and gayest companions, (notwithstanding whatfoeuer courtly holly-water, or plausible hopes of preferment) to deigne their olde familiars the continuance of their former courtesies, without contempt of the barrainest giftes, or empeachment of the meanest persons. The simplist man in a parish, is a shrewd / foole ; and Humanity an Image of Diuinity ; that pulleth-downe the hawty, and setteth-vp the meeke. Euphues, it is good to bee merry : and Lilly, it is good to bee wise : and Papp-hatchet, it is better to loofe a new iest, then an old frend ; that can cramme the capon with his owne Papp, and hew-downe the woodcocke with his owne hatchet. Bolde men, and marchant Venturers haue sometime good lucke : but happ-hazard hath oftentimes good leaue to beshrow his owne pate ; and to imbarke the hardy foole in the famous Shipp of wisemen. I cannot stand nosing of Candlestickes, or euphuing of Similes, *alla Sauoica* : it might happly be done with a trice : but euery man hath not the guift of *Albertus Magnus* : rare birds are dainty ; and they are queint creatures, that are priuiledged to create new creatures. When I haue a mint of precious stones ; & straunge Foules, beastes, and fishes of mine owne coying, (I could name the party, that in com-

parifon of his owne naturall Inuentions, tearmed Pliny a barraine woombe ;) I may peraduenture bleffe you with your owne croffes, & pay you with the vfury of your owne coyne. In the meane while beare with a plaine man, as plaine as old Accurfius, or Barthol de Saxo ferrato ; that wil make his Cenfure good vpon the carrion of thy vnfaury, and ftincking Pamflett ; a fitt booke to be ioyned with Scoggins' woorkes, or the French Mirrour of Madneffe. The very Title difcouereth the wifedome of the young-man : as an olde Fox not long fince bewrayed himfelfe by a flap of his taile ; and a Lion, they fay, is foone defcried by his pawe ; a Cocke by his combe ; a Goat by his bearde ; an Affe by his eare ; a wife-man by his tale ; an artift by his tearmes.

*Papp with an hatchet: aliàs, a Figg for my God-sonne
or, Cracke me this nutt : or, a Country Cuffe,
that / is, A found boxe of the eare, & cetera.*

Written by one, that dares call a Dog a Dog.

*Imprinted by Iohn Anoke, and Iohn Aftile, for the Bailly
of Withernam, Cum priuilegio perennitatis :*

*And are to be fold at the figne of the Crabtree Cudgell
in Thwack-coate Lane.*

What deuife of Martin, or what inuention of any other, could haue fett a fairer Orientall Starre

vpon the forehead of that foule libell? Now you see the brande, and know the Blackamore by his face, turne ouer the leafe; and by the wittinesse of his first sentence, aime at the rest. Milke is like milke: hoony like hoony: Papp like papp: and hee like himselfe; in the whole, a notable ruffler, and in euery part a dowty braggard. *Roome for a roister: so thats well said: itch a little further for a good fellow: now haue at you all, my gassers of the rayling religion: tis I, that must take you a pegg lower. Ile make such a splinter runne into your wittes:* and so fourth in the same lusty tenour. A very artificiall beginning, to moue attention, or to procure good-liking in the reader: vnlesse he wrote onely to roisterdoisters, & hacksters, or at-least to iesters and vices. Oh, but in his Preamble to the indifferent reader, he approueth himselfe a maruellous discreet, and modest man of the sobereft fort, were he not prouoked in conscience, to aunswear contrary to his nature, and manner. You may see, how graue men may be made light, to defend the Church. I perceiue, they were wise, that at riotous times, when youth was wantonnest, and knauery lustiest, as in Christmas, at Shrofetide, in May, at the ende of Harueft, and by such wild fittes, created a certaine extraordinary Officer, called a Lord of Misrule, as a needefull gouernour, or Dictatour,

to fet things in order, and to rule vnruely people ; with whome otherwise / there were no Ho. So, when Reuell-rout beginneth to be a current Autour ; or Hurly-burly a bufy Promotour : *roome for a roifter*, that will bore them thorough the nofes with a cushion ; that will bung-vp their mouthes with a Collyrium of all the stale ieftes in a country ; that will fuffer none to play the Rex, but himfelfe. For that is the very depth of his plot : and who euer began with more roifterly tearmes ; or proceeded with more ruffianly fcoffes ; or concluded with more haire brain'd trickes ; or tired himfelfe with more weather-beaten cranckes ? Whatfcholler, or gentleman, can reade fuch alehoufe and tinkerly ftuffe without blufhing ? They were much deceiued in him, at Oxford, and in the Sauoy, when Mafter Abfolon liued ; that tooke him onely for a dapper & deft companion, or a pert-conceited youth, that had gathered-together a fewe prettie fentences, and could handsomly helpe young Euphues to an old *Simile* : & neuer thought him any fuch mighty doer at the sharpe. But *Ile, Ile, Ile*, is a parlous fellow at *a hatchett* : *hefe like Death* : *hele fpare none* : *hele showe them an Irish tricke* : *hele make them weepe Irish* : *hefe good at the sticking blow* : *his Pofie, what care I ? Vie stabbes*, good Ecclefiaticall learning in his Apologie ; and good Christian charitie in his Homilie. Muster his

arrant braueries together : and where such a terrible killcowe, or such a vengeable bull-beggar to deal withall? O dreadfull dubble V. that, carriest the dubble stoccado in thy penne, what a dubble stabber woldest thou be, were thy hand as tall a fellow, as thy hart, or thy witt as lustie a ladd, as thy minde? Other good fellowes may tell Tales of Gawin: thou art Sir Gawin reuiued, or rather Terrour in person. Yet shall I putt a beane into Gawins ratling scull: and tell thee, where thy flashing / Long-fword commeth short? Thou professest Railing; and emproouest thifselfe in very deede an egregious Railer, as disdaining to yeelde vnto any He, or She Scolde of this age: but what faith my particular Analysis? Dubble V. is old-excellent at his *Cornu copiae*; and I warrant you, neuer to seeke in his Horne-booke: but debarre thoffame horefon Tales of a tubb; and put him beside his Horning, Gaming, Fooling, and Knauing: and he is no boddy, but a fewe pilfred *Similes*; a little Pedanticall Latin; and the highest pitch of his witt, Bulles motion, *alias* the hangmans apron. His Ryme, forestalled by Elderton, that hath Ballats lying a steepe in ale: his Reason, by a Cambrige wagg, a twigging Sophister, that will *Ergo* Martin into an ague, and concludeth peremptorily, Therefore Tiburne must be furr'd with Martins: nothing left for the Third disputer,

but Railing thorough all the moodes, and figures of knauerie, as they come fresh, and fresh to his hand. All three iumpe *in eodem tertio*: nothing but a certaine exercise, termed hanging, will serue their turne: (if it be his destinie, what remedie?) they must draw cuttes, who shall play the Hangerman: and that is the argument of the Tragedie, and the very papp of the hatchet. These are yet all the common-places of his great Paper-boke, & the whole Inuentarie of his witt: though in time he may haply learne to play at ninehole-nidgets; or to canuas a liuerie flowt thorough all the Predicaments of the fower, & twentie orders. When I first tooke a glancing vewe of *Ile, Ile, Ile*, & durst scarcely, be so hardy, to looke the hatchet in the face; methought his Imagination, was hedded like a Saracen; his stomack bellyed, like the great Globe of Orontius; & his breath, like the blast of Boreas in the great Mapp of Mercator. But when we began to renue our old acquain / tance, and to shake the handes of discontinued familiaritie, alas good Gentleman; his mandillion was ouer-cropped; his witt paunched, like his wiues spindle; his art shanked, like a lath; his conceit as lank, as a shotten herring; and that same blustering eloquence, as bleake, and wan, as the Picture of a forlorne Looer. Nothing, but pure Mammaday, and a fewe morfels of fly-blowne

Euphuisme, somewhat nicely minced for puling stomackes. But there be Painters enough, though I goe roundly to worke: and it is my onely purpose, to speake to the purpose. I long sithence founde by experience, how Dranting of Verfes, and Euphuing of sentences did edifie. But had I consulted with the Prognostication of Iohn Securis, I might peradventure haue faued some loofe ends for after clapps. Now his nephew Hatchet must be content to accept of such spare intertainment, as he findeth.

It was Martins folly, to begin that cutting vaine: some others ouersight, to continue it: and double V: triumph, to set it agogg. If the world should applaude to such roisterdoisterly Vanity, (as Impudency hath bene prettily suffered to fett-vpp the creast of his vaine glory:) what good could grow out of it, but to make eury man madbrayned, and desperate; but a generall contempt of all good order, in Saying, or Dooing; but an Vniuersall Topsy-tur[v]y? He were a very simple Oratour, a more simple politician, and a most-simple Deuine, that should fauour Martinizing: but had I bene Martin, (as for a time I was vainely suspected by such madd Copefmates, that can surmize any thing for their purpose, howfoeuer vnlikely, or monstros:) I would haue bene so farre from being mooued by such a fan-

tafticall Confuter, that it should haue bene one of my May-games, or August triumphes, to haue driuen / Officials, Commiffaries, Archdeacons, Deanes, Chauncellors, Suffraganes, Bifhops, and Archbifhops, (fo Martin would haue florifhed at the leaft) to entertaine fuch an odd, light-headed fellow for their defence ; a professed iefter, a Hick-fcorner, a scoff-maifter, a playmunger, an Interluder ; once the foile of Oxford, now the ftale of London, and euer the Apesflogg of the preffe, *Cum Priuilegio perennitatis*. Had it not bene a better courfe, to haue followed Ariftotles doctrine: and to haue confuted leuity with grauity, vanity with difcretion, rafhnes with aduife, madneffe with fobriety, fier with water, ridiculous Martin with reuerend Cooper? Efppecially in Ecclefiaticall caufes: where it goeth hard, when Scoggin, the Iouiall foole, or Skelton, the Malancholy foole, or Elderton, the bibbing foole, or Will Sommer the chollericke foole, muft play the feate ; and Church-matters cannot bee difcuffed without rancke fcurrility, and as it were a Synode of Diapafon fooles. Some few haue a ciuill pleafant vaine, and a dainety fplene without scandale: fome fuch percafe might haue repayed the Marr-prelate home to good purpofe: other obfcenity, or vanity confuteth itfelfe, and impeacheth the caufe. As good forbear an irregular foole, as beare a foole hetero-

clitall: and better abide a comparitiue knaue, that pretendeth religion, then suffer a knaue superlatiue, that setteth cocke on hoope. Serious matters would be handeled feriously, not vpon simplicitie, but vppon choice; not to flesh, or animate, but to disgrace, and shame Leuity. A glicking *Pro*, and a frumping *Contra*, shall haue much-adoe to shake handes in the *Ergo*. There is no ende of girdes, & bobbes: it is found Argumentes, and grounded Authorities, that must strike the definitiue stroke, and decide the controuersy, with mutuall satisfaction. Martin bee wise, though / Browne were a foole: and Papp-hatchet be honest, though Barrow be a knaue: it is not your heauing, or hoising coile, that buildeth-vpp the walles of the Temple. Alas poore miserable desolate most-woefull Church, had it no other builders, but such architects of their owne fantasies, and such maisons of infinite contradiction. Time, informed by secrete intelligence, or resolued by curious discouery, spareth no cost, or trauaile, to preuent Mischiefe: but employeth her two woorthy Generals, Knowledge, & Industry, to cleere the coast of vagarant errors in Doctrine; and to scoure the sea of rouing corruptions in Discipline. Roome was not reared-vpp in one day; nor cannot be pulled downe in one day. A perfect Ecclesiasticall Discipline, or autentique

Pollicy of the Church, (that may auowe, I haue neither more, nor leffe, then enough; but iust the nomber, weight, and measure of exact gouernement) is not the worke of One man whofoeuer, or of one age whatfoeuer: it requireth an incredible-great iudgement: exceeding-much reading in Ecclesiasticall histories, Councils, Decrees, Lawes: long, and ripe practise in Church-causes. Plat-formes offer themselues to euery working conceit; and a few Tables, or Abridgements are soone dispatched: but, whatfoeuer pretext may coulerably bee alledged, vndoubtedly they attempt, they know not what, and enterprife about the possibility of their reach, that imagine they can in a Pamflet, or two, contriue such an omnifufficient, and incorruptible Method of Ecclesiasticall gouernement, as could not by any priuate meditation, or publike occasion be found-out, with the studdy, or practise of fiftene hundred yeeres. I am not to dispute, as a professed Deuine; or to determine, as a seuerer Censour: but a scholler may deliuer his opinion with reason: and a friend may lend / his aduise at occasion: especially when hee is vrged to speake, or suspected for silence. They must licence mee to dissent from them, that autorise theselues to disagree from so many notable, and woorthy men, in the common reputation of so long a space. They condemne superstitious, &

credulous simplicity: it were a fond simplicity to defende it, where it swarueth from the Trueth, or strayeth out-of the way: but discretion can as little commend opiniotiuē and preiudicate assertions, that striue for a needeleffe, and daungerous Innouation. It is neither the Excesse, nor the Defect, but the Meane, that edifyeth. Plato comparing Aristotle, and Xenocrates together; Xenocrates, quoth he, needeth a spurre: Aristotle a Bridle. And if Princes, or Parlements want a goade, may not Subiects, or Admonitions want a snaffle? Is there pretence, for Libertie to aduise the wisest, or for Zeale to pricke-forward the highest: and no reason for Prudence to curbe Rashnesse, or for Autoritie to reane Licentiousnesse? May Iudgement be whoodwinked with friuolous traditions: and cannot Phantasie be enueigled with newfangled conceites? Superstition, and Credulitie, are simple Creatures: but what are Contempt, and Tumult? What is the principall cause of this whole Numantine Warre, but affectation of Nouelty, without ground? If all without exception, from the very schollers of the Primitiue, and heroical schoole, wanted knowledge, or zeale: how rare, and singular are their blessings, that haue both, in so plentifull, and incomparable measure? Assuredly there were many excellent witts, illuminate minds, and deuout soules before them: if

nothing matchable with them, what greater Maruell in this age? Or if they were not rightly disciplined, that liued so Vertuoufly, and Christianly together; what an inestimable treasure is founde, & what a cleere fountaine of holy life? Where are godly minds become, that they embrace not that sacred societie? What aile Religious handes that they stay from building-vpp the Cittie of God? Can Platos Republique, and Mores Vtopia winne hartes: and cannot the heauenly Hierusalem conquer soules? Can there be a greater impietie, then to hinder the rearing-vp of those celestially walles? why forgetteth the grose Church, that it ought to be the pure kingdome of heauen? To zeale, euen speede is delay; / and a yeare, an age. But how maturely, and iudicioufly some busie motions haue bene considered-vpon, by their hoat sollicitours, it would not passe vnexamined. A strong Discipline standeth not vpon feeble feete: and a weake foundation will neuer beare the weight of a mightie Hierusalem. The great shouldders of Atlas oftentimes shrinke and faint vnder the great burden of heauen. The Tabernacle of Moses; the Temple of Salomon; the Golden Age of the Primitiue Church; and the siluer regiment of Constantine, would be looked-into, with a sharper, and cleerer eye. The difference of Commonwealthes, or regiments, re-

quireth a difference of lawes, and orders: and those lawes, and orders are most souerain, that are most agreable to the regiment, and best proportioned to the Commonwealth. The matter of Elections, and offices, is a principall matter in question: and how many not onely ignorant, or curious, but learned, and considerate wits, haue lost themselues, and founde errour, in the discourse of that subiect? But how compendiously might it be concluded, that is so infinitely argued; or how quietly decided, that is so tumultuously debated? I relye not vpon the vncertaintie of disputable rules; or the subtiltie of intricate arguments; or the ambiguitie of doubtfull allegations; or the casualtie of fallible experiments: but grounde my resolution vpon the assurance of such politique, and Ecclesiasticall Principles, as in my opinion can neither be deceiued grosely, nor deceiue dangerously. Popular Elections, and offices, aswell in Churches, as in Commonwealthes, are for popular states: Monarchies, and Aristocracies, are to celebrate their elections, and offices, according to their forme of gouernement, and the best correspondence of their states, Ciuill, and Ecclesiasticall: and may iustifie their / good proceeding by good diuinitie. As they grauely, and religiously prooued, that in the flourishing propagation, and mightie encrease of the Catholique Church vnder Princes, before,

in, and after the Empire of Conſtantine, were driuen to varie from ſome primitiue Exāples : not by vnlawfull corruptiō, as is ignorātly furniſed ; but by lawfull prouiſiō, according to the exigence of occaſions, & neceſſitie of alteration in thoſe ouer-ruling caſes : as appeareth by pregnant euidence of Eccleſiaſticall hiſtories, and Canons ; wherewith they are to conſult, that affect a deepe inſight in the deciſiō of ſuch controuerſies ; & not to leape at all aduentures, before they haue looked about thē, aſwell backward, as forward, & aſwell of the one ſide, as of the other. Conſideration is a good Counſellour : & Reading, no badd Remēbrancer ; eſpecially, in the moſt eſſentiall Common-places of Doctrīne, and the moſt important matters of Gouvernement. Ignorance may ſome way be the father of Zeale, as it was wont to be termed the moother of Deuotion : but blind men ſwallow-downe many flies ; and none more, then many of them, that imagin they know all, and conceit an abſolute omnifufficiencie in their owne platformes, with an vniuerſall contempt of whatſoeuer contradiction, ſpeciall, or generall, moderne, or auncient : when vndoubtedly they are to ſeeke in a thouſand points of requiſite, and neceſſarie conſideration. Lord, that men ſhould ſo pleaſe, and flatter themſelues in their owne deuifes : as if none had eyes, but they. God neuer beſtowed his diuine giſtes in vayne :

they are not so lightly to be reiected, that so grauely demeaned themfelues, instructed their brethren, reclaimed infidels, conquered countryes, planted Churches, confounded Heretiques, and incessantly trauailed in Gods caufes, with the whole deuotion of / their foules: howfoeuer some can be content to thinke, that fince the Apostles, none euer had the fpirit of Vnderftanding, or the mindes of fincerity, but themfelues. Pardon me, pure intelligences, and incorruptible mindes. The auncient Fathers, and Doctōrs of the Church, wanted neither learning, nor iudgement, nor confcience, nor zeale: as some of their Greeke, and Latin woorkes very notably declare: (if they were blinde, happy men that fee :) and what wifer Senates, or hollyer Congregations, or any way more reuerent affemblies, then some Generall, and some Prouinciall Councils? Where they to a superficiall opinion, feeme to fett-vpp a Gloffe, againft, or befide the Text; it would bee confidered, what their confiderations were; and whether it can appeare, that they directly, or indirectly proceeded without a refpectiue regard of the Commōwealth, or a tender care of the Church, or a reuerend examination of that Text. For I pray God, we loue the Text no worfe, from the bottome of our hartes, then some of them did. They are not the fimpleft, or diffoluteft men, that thinke, Difcretion might haue leaue to cutt his

coate according to his cloth; and commend their humility, patience, wifdome, and whole conformity, that were ready to accept any requisite order not vnlawfull, and to admitt any decent, or seemly rites of indifferent nature. Put the case, iust as it was then, and in those countries; and what if some suppose, that euen M. Caluin, M. Beza, M. Meluin, or M. Cartwright, (notwithstanding their new deseignementes) being in the same estate, wherein they were then, and in those countries, would haue resolued no otherwise in effect, then they determined. Or if they did not so perfectly well, I pray God we may. Howbeit none so fitt to reconcile contradictions, or to accord differences, as hee that / distinguisheth Times, Places, Occasions, and other swaying Circumstances; high pointes in gouernement, either Ciuill, or Ecclesiasticall. As in the doubtfull Paragraphs, and Canons of the Law of man; so in the mysticall oracles of the Law of God; *Qui benè distinguit, benè docet*: in the one, when hee vseth no distinction but of the Law, or some reason equipollent to the Law: in the other, when he interpreteth the Scripture by the Scripture, either expressly by conference of Text with Text, or collectiue by the rule of Analogy. In cases indifferent, or arbitrary, what so equall in generall, as Indifferency: or so requisite in speciall, as conformity to the positie Lawe, to

the custome of the Countrey, or to the present occasion? To be peruerse, or obstinate without necessary cause, is a peeuisht folly: when by such a dutyfull, and iustificable order of proceeding, as by a sacred League, so infinite Variances, and contentions may be compounded. To the cleane, all things are cleane. S. Paule, that layed his foundation like a wise architect, and was a singular frame of diuinity, (omnisufficiently furnished to be a Doctour of the Nations, & a Conuertour of People) became all vnto all, and as it were a Christian Mercury, to winne some. Oh, that his Knowledge, or Zeale were as rife, as his Name: and I would to God, some could learne to behaue themselues toward Princes, and Magistrates, as Paul demeaned himselfe, not onely before the King Agrippa, but also before the twoo Romane Procuratours of that Prouince, Felix, and Festus: whome he entreated in honourable termes, albeit ethnicke gouernours. Were none more scrupulous, then S. Paul, how easly, and gratiouly might diuers Confutations bee reconciled, that now rage, like Ciuill Warres? The chiefeft matter in question, is no article of beliefe, but a point of pollicy, / or gouernement: wherin a Iudiciall Equity being duely obserued, what letteth but the particular Lawes, Ordinances, Iniunctions, and whole manner of Iurisdiction, may rest in the disposition of Soue-

raine Autoritie? Whose immediate, or mediate actes, are to be reuerenced with Obedience, not countermaunded with fedition, or controled with contention. He is a bold subiect, that attempteth to binde the handes of sacred Maiefty : and they loue controuerfies well, I trow, that call their Princes proceedings into Controuerfie. Altercations, and Paradoxes, aswell in Discipline, as in Doctrine, were neuer fo curiously curious, or fo infinitely infinite : but when all is done, and when Innouation hath fett the best countenance of prooffe, or perfuasion, vpon the matter ; Kingdomes will stand, and Free-Citties muft be content. Their Courts, are no Prefidents for Royall Courts : their Councels, no instructions for the Councels of Kings, or Queenes : their Consiftories, that would master Princes, no informations for the Consiftories vnder Princes : their Discipline, no Canon, or platforme for fouerraine gouvernement, either in Caufes Temporall or Spirituall. And can you blame them, that maruell, how of all other Tribunals, or benches, that Iewish Synedrion, or Pontificall Consiftory should fo exceedingly grow in request, that put Christ himselfe to death, and was a whipp for his deereft Apostles? I am loth to enter the listes of argumentation, or discourse, with any obstinate minde, or violent witt, that weeneth his owne Conceit, a cleere Sunne without Eclipse, or a full Moone

without wanes: but fifth Importunacy will neuer linne molesting Parliaments, and Princes, with Admonitions, Aduertifements, Motions, Petitions, Repetitions, Sollicitations, Declamations, Discourses, Methods, Flatteries, Menaces, and / all possible instant meanes of enforcing, and extorting the present Practise of their incorruptible Theorie; it would be som-bodies taske, to holde them a little occupied, till a greater Resolution begin to subscribe, & a surer Prouision to execute. May it therefore please the busiest of those, that debarre Ecclesiasticall persons of all Ciuill iurisdiction, or temporall function, to consider; how euery petty *Parish*, in England, to the number of about 5200. more, or lesse, may be made a Ierusalem, or Metropolitan Sea, like the noblest Cittie of the Orient, (for so Pliny calleth Ierusalem): how euery *Minister* of the sayd Parishes, may be promoted to be an high Priest, and to haue a Pontificall Consistorie: how euery *Assistant* of that Consistorie, may emprooue himselfe an honorable, or worshipfull Senior, according to his reuerend calling: (for not onely the Princes of Families, or the Princes of Tribes, but the Princes of Citties, or Iudges, the Decurions, the Quinquagenarians, the Centurians, the Chiliarkes, were inferiour Officers to the Seniors): how a *Princely and Capitall Court*, and euen the high Councill of Parliament, or

supreme Tribunall of a Royall Cittie, (for there was no Seniorie in Iudæa, but at Ierusalem ; fauing when the Proconful Gabinius, in a Romane Pollicy deuided that nation into fiue parts, and appointed foure other Confistories), how such a Princely, and stately Court, should be the patterne of a *Presbitery in a poore Parish* : how the Principalitie or *Pōtificalitie* of a *Minister* according to the degenerate Sanedrim, should be sett-vpp, when the *Lordship of a Bishop*, or Archbishop, according to their position, is to be pulled-downe : finally how the *supremacie ouer Kings*, and Emperours should be taken from the highest Priest, or *Pope*, to be bestowed vpon an *ordinarie Minister*, or Curate : and how / that Minister should dispense with Aristotles *Law of instrumēts*, *ἔκρος ἐν* : or become more mighty then Hercules, that could not encounter *two charges att once* : or at least how that Ciuil Court, that *meere Ciuill Court*, for so it was ; before it declined frō the first institutiō ; euen as meerly ciuill, as the Romane Senate) should be transformed into a Court *meerly Ecclesiasticall*. When these points are considered ; if withall it be determined by euidēt demōstration, as cleere as the Sunne, and as inuincible as Gods-word, that whatfoeuer the Apostles did for their time, is immutably perpetuall, and necessarie for all times : and that nothing by way of speciall

respect, or present occasiō, is left to the ordinaunce, dispositiō, or prouisiō of the Church, but the strict and precise practise of their Primitiue Discipline, according to some Precepts in S. Pauls Epistles, and a few Examples in the Actes of the Apostles : *So be it*, must be the suffrage of vs, that haue no Voyce in the Sanedrim. All is concluded in a few pregnant propositions : we shall not neede to trouble, or entangle our wittes with many Articles, Iniunctions, Statutes, or other ordinances : the Generall, Prouinciall, and Episcopall Councels, lost much good labour in their Canons, Decrees, and whatsoeuer Ecclesiasticall Constitutions : the workes of the fathers, and Doctours, howsoeuer auncient, learned, or Orthodoxall, are little, or nothing worth : infinite studdies, writings, commentaries, treatises, conferences, consultations, disputations, distinctions, conclusions of the most-notable Schollers in Christendome, altogether superfluous. Well-worth a fewe resolute Aphorismes ; that dispatch more in a word, then could be bouted-out in fiften hundred yeares ; and roundly determine all with an *Vpsy-downe*. No reformation without an *Vpsy-downe*. In deede that is one of Ma/chiauels Positions : and seeing it is prooued a peece of sound doctrine, it must not be gain-sayd. Euery head, that hath a hand, pull-downe the pride of Bishops, and set vp the humilitie of Ministers.

Diogenes treade vpon Platos pompe. An vniuerfall reformation be proclaimed with the founde of a Iewes-trumpe: let the Pontificall Conſiſtorie be erected in euery Pariſh: let the high Prieſt, or Archbiſhop of euery Pariſh, be enſtalled in Moſes Chaier, (it was Moſes, not Aarons Chayer, that they challenge in their Senate: & he muſt be greater then Hercules, that can fulfill both): let the Miniſterie be a Royall Prieſthood; and the dominiõ of his Segniorie, raigne like a Prieſt John: let it euerlaſtingly be recorded for a fouerain Rule, as deare as a Iewes eye, that Iofephus alledged out-of the Law; *Nihil agat Rex, ſine Pontificis, & Seniorum ſententia.* Onely let the ſayd Pontife beware, he prooue not a great Pope in a little Roome; or diſcouer not the humour of aſpiring Stukely, that would rather be the king of a moulhill, then the ſecond in Ireland, or England. Some Stoiques, and melancholie perſons haue a ſpice of ambition by themſelues: and euen *Iunius Brutus* the firſt, was ſomway a kinde of *Tarquinius Superbus*: and *Iunius Brutus* the ſecond, is not altogether a mortified Creature, but bewrayeth as it were ſome reliques of fleſhe, and bloud, aſwell as his inwardeſt friend *Euſebius Philadelphus*. I dare come no neerer: yet Greenwood, and Barrow begin already to complaine of ſurly, and ſolemne brethren: and God knoweth

how that Pontificall chayer of estate, might worke in man, as he is man. Mercurie sublimed, is somewhat a coy, and stout fellow : and I beleue, those high, and mighty Peeres, would not sticke, to looke for a low, and humble legge. Euery / man must haue his due in his place : and honour alibly belongeth to redoubted Seniours. That is their proper title at Geneua. Now if it seeme as cleere a case in Pollicie, as in Diuinitie ; that one, and the same Discipline may serue diuers, and contrarie formes of regiment, and be as fitt for the head of England, as for the foote of Geneua : The worst is, Aristotles Politiques must be burned for heretiques. But how happie is the age, that in stead of a thousand Positiue Lawes, and Lesbian Canons, hath founde one standing Canon of Polycletus, an immutable Law of sacred gouernement ? And what a blissefull destinie had the Commonwealth, that must be the Modell of all other Commonwealthes, and the very Center of the Christian world ? Let it be so for euer, and euer, if that *Pamflet of the Lawes, and Statutes of Geneua*, aswell concerning the Ecclesiasticall Discipline, as Ciuill regiment ; deserue any such singular, or extraordinarie estimation, either for the one, or for the other. If not ; are they not busie men, that will needes beare a rule, and strike a maine stroke, where they haue nothing to doe,

or are to be ruled? It were a good hearing in my eare, that some of them could gouerne themselves, but in reasonable wise sort, that are so forward to fwey kingdomes, and to fwing Churches after their new fashions; and can stande vpon no grounde, but their owne. If certaine of them be godlyer, or learned, then many other, (according to their fauorablest reputation,) it is the better for them: I would also, they were wiser, then some of them, whom they impugne. Surely I feare, they will be founde more peremptorie in Censure, then founde in Iudgement; and more smart in reproofe, then sharpe in prooffe. And may it not be a probable doubt, how they haue compared together the *Law* of Gods people, and the *Gospell* / of Christes Church in the Bible: or how they haue studded *Iosephus*, *Philo*, & *Egesippus* of the Iewish affaires; or *Sigonius* of the Hebrue Commonwealth; or *Freigius* his Mosaicus; or their owne *Bonauentura* of the Iudaicall Pollicy; that fetch their Iurisdiction from the *Sanedrim* corrupted; and ground their Reformation vpon the Iewes *Thalmud*, the next neighbour to the Turkes *Alcoran*. Had *Ramus* Treatise of Discipline come to light, they would long-ere-this haue benee ashamed of their Sanedrim, and haue blushed to foist-in the *Thalmud*, in steede of the Bible. God helpe poore Discipline, if the water bee like the Conduit, the

Oile like the Lampe, and the Plant like the Tree. Abraham was the beginning : Dauid the middest : and Christ the ende of the Hebrue history : his Gospell, not his ennemies Thalmud, the pure fountaine of reformation, and the onely cleere resplendishing Sunne, that giueth light to the starres of heauen, & earth; vnto which the Church, his most deere and sweete spouse, is more deeply, and more incomprehensibly bounden, then the day vnto the Sunne, that shineth from his glistering chariot. It is not for a Pontificall Seniory or a Mechanicall Eldership, to stopp the course of any riuer, that successeiely floweth from that liquid fountaine : or to putt-out any Candle, that was originally lighted at that inextinguible Lampe. The Church hath small cause, to dote vpon the Coofen-germane of Tyranny : and the Commonwealth hath no great affection to the Sworn-brother of Anarchy. Certainly States neede not long to interteine tumultuous, and neuer-fatisfied Innouation. And I hope he was not greatly vnaduised, that being demanded his opinion of the Eldership in question; answered, he conceiued of the *Eldership*, (as it is intended, and motioned in England) as he thought of the *Elder-tree*, that whatfoeuer it appeared in shewe, it would in triall prooue frutelesse, seedelesse, bitter, fraile, troublous, and a friend to surging waues,

and tempestuous stormes. And being further
 pressed touching the forward Zeale of dowie
 Martin Seniour, liuely Martin Iuniour, pert Penry,
 lusty Barrow, and some other bragge Reformistes:
 (for that rowling stone of Innouation was neuer fo
 turlled and tumbled, as since those busie limmes
 began to rowse, and besturre them, more then
 all the Pragmatiques in Europe): when young
 Phaeton, quoth he, in a presumptuous resolution
 would needes rule the Chariot of the Sunne,
 as it might be the Temple of Apollo, or the
 Church of S. Paule, or some greater Prouince
 (for the greater Prouince, Commonwealth, or
 Monarchy, the fitter for Phaetons reformation):
 his suddaine ruine ministred matter of most
 lamentable teares, to his deare mother, and louing
 Sisters: in somuch, that they were pittifully
 chaunged, as some write, into *Elder-trees*, as
 some, into *Poplars*. *Sic fleuit Clymene: sic &*
Clymeneides altæ: as it might be the mourne-
 full Church and her wailing members, woefully
 transfmewed into *Elders*, or *Poplars*. Good my
 Masters, either make it an euident, and infallible
 case, without sophistickall wrangling, or personall
 brawling; that your vnexperienced Discipline, not
 the order approoued, is the pure / well of that
 diuine Spring, and the cleere light of that heauenly
 Sunne: or I beseech you, pacifie yourselues, and

Martin

Clymeneides

furceafe to endaunger kingdomes with vnneedefull vprores. Crooked proceedings would be rectified by a right, not a crooked line: and Abufes reformed, not by abusing the perfons, but by well-vfing the things thēfelues. I spare my auncients, afwell at home as abroade: yet Beza might haue bene good to fome Doctours of the Church; and better then he is, to *Ramus*, *Erastus*, *Kemnitius*, and fundry other excellent men of this age: (neither can it fufficiently appeare, that the two famous Lawyers, *Gribaldus*, and *Baldwinus*, were fuch monftrous Apoftataes, or poyfonous Here-tiques, as he reporteth): and whither fome other, neerer hand, haue not bene too-familiarly bold with their Superiours, of approoued learning, and wifedome, meete for their reuerend, and honorable calling; my betters Iudge.

Modesty is a Ciuil Vertue, and Humility a Christian quality: Surely Martin is too too-malappert to be difcreet; and Barrow too too-hoat, to bee wife: if they be godly, God helpe Charity: but in my opiniō they little wot, what a Chaos of diforders, confufions, & abfurdities they breed, that fweat to build a reformation in a monarchy, vpon a popular foundation, or a mechanicall plott; & will needes be as fiery in execution, euen to wring the Clubb out-of Hercules hand, as they were aëry in refolution. Alas, that wife men, and

T. deo. - .

Virtues

reformers of states (I know not a weightier Province) should once imagine, to finde it a matter of as light consequence, to seniorise in a realme, ouer the greatest Lordes, and euen ouer the highnesse of Maiestie ; as in a towne, ouer a company of meane marchantes, and meaner artificers. I will not sticke, to make the best of it. M. Caluin, / the founder of the plott, (whome Beza stileth the great Caluin) had reason to establish his ministry against Inconstancy, and to fortify himselfe against Faction (as he could best deuise, and compasse with the assistance of his French party, and other fauorites) by encroaching vpon a mechanicall, and mutinous people, from whose variable and fickle mutability he could no otherwise assure himselfe. As he sensibly found not onely by dayly experiences of their giddy and factious nature, but also by his owne expulsion, and banishment : whome after a little triall, (as it were for a dainety nouelty, or sly experiment) they could be content to vse as kindly, and loyally, as they had vsed the old Bishopp, their lawfull Prince. Could M. Cartwright, or M. Trauerse feaze vpon such a Citty, or any like popular towne, Heluetian or other, where Democracy ruleth the rost : they should haue some-bodies good leaue to prouide for their owne security ; and to take their best aduantage vpon tickle

Cantons. Some one peradventure in time would canton them well-enough ; and giue a shrewd pull at a Metropolitan Sea, as foueraine, as the old Bishoprike of Geneua. It were not the first time, that a Democracy by degrees hath prooued an Aristocracy ; an Aristocracy degenerated into an Oligarchy ; an Oligarchy amounted to a Tyranny, or Principality. No Rhetorique Climax so artificiall, as that Politique Gradation. But in a iust kingdome, where is other good affurance for Ministers, and meeter Councils for Princes, then such swarmes of imperious Elderships ; it is not for subiectes to vsurpe, as Commaunders may tirannise in a small territory. Vnlesse they meane to sett-vp a generall Deformation, in lieu of an Vniuersall Reformation ; and to bring-in an order, that would soone prooue a diluge of disorder ; an ouerflow of Anarchy ; / and an open Fludgate, to drowne Pollicy with licentioufnes, nobility with obscurity, and the honour of realmes with the basenesse of Cantons. They that long for the bane, and plague of their Country, pray for that many-hedded, and Cantonish reformation: in issue good for none, but the high Iudges of the Consistory, and their appropriate Creatures: as I will iustify at large, in case I be euer particularly challenged. I am no pleader for the regiment of the feete ouer the head, or the gouernement of the

stomacke over the hart : surely nothing can be
 more pernicious in practise, or more miserable
 in conclusion, then a commaunding authority in
 them, that are borne to obey, ordained to live
 in priuate condition, made to follow their occu-
 pations, and bound to homage. You that be
 schollars, moderate your inuention with iudgement :
 and you that be reasonable gentlemen, pacify
 your selues with reason. If it be an iniury, to
 enclose Commons ; what iustice is it, to lay open
 enclosures ? and if Monarchies must suffer popular
 states to enioy their free liberties, and ampleft
 fraunchises, without the least infringing, or
 abridgment : is there no congruence of reason,
 that popular states should giue Monarchies leaue,
 to vse their Positiue lawes, established orders, and
 Royall Prerogatiues, without disturbance, or con-
 futation ? Bicause meaner Ministers, then Lordes,
 may become a popular Cittie, or territorie ; must
 it therefore be an absurditie in the maiesty of a
 kingdome, to haue some Lordes spirituall amongst
 so many temporall : aswell for the fitter corres-
 pondence and combination of both degrees ; their
 more reuerend priuate direction in matters of
 conscience ; their weightier publique Counsell in
 Parlements and Synods ; the firmer assurance of
 the Clergie in their causes ; and the more honor-
 able est/imation of Religion in all respectes ; as

for the folemner vifitation of their Dioces, & other competent Iurifdiction. It is Tyrannie, or vain-glorie, not reuerend Lordfhip, that the Scripture condemmeth. There were Bifhops, or as some will haue them termed, Superintendents, with Epifcopall fuperioritie, and iurifdiction; in the golden age of the Apoftles: *Timothie* of Ephesus; *Titus* of Crete; *Marke* of Alexandria; *Iames* of Ierufalem; *Philemon* of Gaza; the eloquent *Apollos* of Cæfarea; *Euodius* of Antioche; *Sofipater* of Iconium, according to Dorotheus, of Theffalonica, according to Origene; *Tychicus* of Chalcedon; *Ananias* of Damafcus: and fo forth. Diuers of the auncient Fathers, and Doctours, afwell of the Orientall, as of the Occidentall Churches, were Bifhops, reuerend Fathers in Chrift, and fpiritual Lordes. The fame ftile, or title of reuerence, hath fucceffiuely continued to this age, without any empeachment of value, or contradiction of note; fauing that of the angrie Malcontent, and prowde heretique Aërius, fcarfely worth the naming. What cruell outrage hath it lately committed, or what haynous indignitie hath it newly admitted, (more then other aduancements of Vertue, or ftiles of honour,) that it fhould now be cancelled, or abandoned in all haft? Would God, fome were no ftouter, or hawtier without the title, then fome are with it? Many temporall Lordes, Dukes, Princes,



Kinges, and Emperours, haue shoven very-notable effectuall examples of Christian humilitie: and may not spirituall Lordes carrie spirituall mindes? I hope, they do: I know, some doe: I am fuer, all may; notwithstanding their ordinarie title, or an hundred plaufible Epithits. I would the Lordship, or pompe of Bishops, were the greatestt abuse in Commonwealthes, or Churches. I fear me, I shall neuer liue to / see so happie a world vpon the Earth, that aduised Reformation should haue nothing worse to complaine-off, then that Lordship, or pompe. What may be, or is amisse, in any degree; I defend not: (the delict of some one, or two Prelates, were it manifest, ought not to redounde to the damage, or detriment of the Church): what may stande with the honour of the realme; with the benefite of the Church; with the approbation of antiquitie, and with the Canon of the Scripture, I haue no reason to impugne, or abridge. I haue more cause to suspect that some earnest dealers might be persuaded to dispense with the name of Lordship in Bishops, on condition, themselues might be the parties: that would not secularlie abuse the title to any priuate pompe, or vanitie, but religiousslie applie it to the publike adminiftration of the Churche, according to the first institution. Were dalliance safe in such cases; I could wishe the experiment in a person, or

two, in whose complexions I haue some insight. Doctour Humfry of Oxford, and Doctour Fulke of Cambridge, two of their standard-bearers a long time, grew conformable in the end, as they grew riper in experience, and sager in iudgement: and why may not such, and such, in the like, or weightier respectes, condescend to a like toleration of matters Adiaphorall? Sith it will be no other-wise (maugre all Admonitions, or whatsoeuer zealous Motiues) better relent with fauour, then resist in vayne. Were any fayre offer of prefermēt, handsomely tendered vnto some, that gape not greedily after promotion, nor can-away with this-same seruile waiting, or plausible courting for liuing: I doubt not but wise men would see what were good for themselues, commodious for their frendes, and conuenient for the Church. If they should obstinately refuse / Deaneries, and Bishopricks; I should verely beleue, they are moued with stronger arguments, and pregnanter authorities, then any, they haue yet published in Print, or vttered in disputation: and I would be very glad to conferre with them, for my instruction. Sound reafons, & autenticall quotations may preuayle much: & no such inuincible defence, as the armour of Prooffe. In the mean time, the cause may be remembred, that incensed the foresayd factious malcontent, Aërius, to maintaine

the equalitie of Bishops, and other Priestes, when himselfe failed in his ambitious suite for a Bishopricke: and all resteth vpon a case of conscience, as nice and squeamish a scruple with some zealous Marr-prelates, as whither the Fox in some good respects, might be woon to eate grapes. They that would pregnantly try Conclusions, might peradventure finde such a temptation, the material-left and learnedest Confutation, that hath yet bene Imprinted. Melancholie is deeply wise; and Choler resolutely stout: they must persuaide them essentially, and feelingly, that will mooue them effectually. Were they entreated to yeelde, other arguments would subscribe of their owne gentle accord; and ingenuously confesse, that Opinion is not to preiudice the Truth, or Faction to derogate from Autoritie. Possession was euer a strong defendant: and a iust title maketh a puissant aduersarie. Bishops will gouerne with reputation, when Marr-Prelats must obey with reuerence, or resist with contumacie. Errours in doctrine; corruptions in manners; and abuses in offices, would be reformed: but degrees of superioritie, and orders of obedience are needefull in all estates: and especially in the Clergie as necessarie, as the Sunne in the day, or the Moone in the night: or Cock-on-hoope, with a hundred / thousand Curates in the world, would prooue a

mad Discipline. Let Order be the golden rule of proportion ; & I am as forward an Admonitioner, as any Precifian in Ingland. If diforder muft be the Discipline, and confufion the Reformatiō, (as without difference of degrees, it muft needes) I craue pardon. *Anarchie*, was neuer yet a good States-man : and *Ataxie*, will euer be a badd Church-man. That fame luftie Downefall, is too-hoat a Pollicie for my learning. They were beft, to be content to let Bifhopricks ftande, that would be loth to fee Religion fall, or the Clergie troden vnder foote. He conceiueth little, that perceiueth not, what bondes hold the world in order, and what tenures maintaine an affurance in eftates. Were Minifters Stipendiaries, or Penfionars, (which hath alfo bene a wife motion) and all without diftinction, alike eftemed, that is, all without regard, alike contemned, & abiected, (which would be the iffue of vnequal Equallity) ; woe to the poore Miniftery : and the cunningeft practife of the confiftorie, fhould haue much-adoe, to ftopp thofe gapps, and recure thofe fores. Neuer a more fuccourleffe Orphan ; or a more defolate widdow ; or a more diftressed Pilgrim ; then fuch a Miniftery : vntill in a thirfty, & hungry zeale, it fhould eftfoones retire to former prouifions, & recoouer that aunciēt Oeconomy Ecclefiaticall. The fureft reueneue, & honorableft

salary of that coate; much-better iwis, thē the
 souldiours pay, or the Seruing-mās wages. Equality,
 in things equall, is a iust Law: but a respectiue
 valuation of persons, is the rule of Equity: &
 they little know, into what incōgruities, & ab-
 surdities they runne headlong, that are weary of
Geometricall proportion, or distributiue Iustice, in
 the collation of publique functions, offices, or
 promotions, ciuile, or spirituall. God bestoweth
 his blessings with difference; / and teacheth his
 Lieutenant the Prince, to estimate, and preferre
 his subiectes accordingly. When better Autors
 are alledged for equalitie in persons Vnequall; I
 will liue, and dye in defence of that equalitie;
 and honour *Arithmeticall Proportion*, as the onely
 ballance of Iustice, and sole standard of gouerne-
 ment. Meane-while, they that will-be wiser, then
 God, and their Prince, may continue a peeuish
 scrupulositie in subscribing to their ordinances;
 and nurrish a rebellious Contumacie, in refusing
 their orders. I wish vnto my frendes, as vnto
 miselfe: and recommende Learning to discretion,
 conceit to iudgment, zeale to knowledge, dutie
 to obedience, confusion to order, Vncertaintie
 to assurance, and Vnlawfull noueltie to lawfull
 Vniformitie: the sweetest repose, that the Com-
 mon-wealth, or Church can enioy. *Regnum*
diuifum, a souerain Text; and what notabler

Glosse vpon a thousand Texts? Or what more cordiall restorative of Boddy, or Soule, then, *Ecce quàm bonum, & quàm iucundum?* Sweet my masters, be sweet: and without the least bitternesse of vnnecessarie strife, tender your affectionatest deuotiōs of Zeale, and Honour, to the best contentment of your friends, your Patrons, your Prince, the Cōmonwealth, the Church, the Almighty: which so dearely looue, so bountifully maintaine, so mightily protect, so graciously fauour, and so indulgentially tender you. Confounde not yourselues: and what people this day more blessed, or what nation more flourishing? Some feruent, and many counterfait loouers, adore their mistresses; and commit Idolatrie to the least of their bewties: oh, that we knew what a Sacrifice, Obedience were; and what a Iewell of Iewells he offereth, that presenteth Charitie. Without which, we may talke of Doctrine, and discourse of Discipline: but Doctrine is a Parrat; / Discipline an Eccho; Reformation a shadow; Sanctification a dreame without Charitie: in whose sweet boosome Reconciliation harboureth; the dearest friend of the Church, and the only Est Amen of so infinite Controuerfies. That Reconciliation settle itselfe to examine matters barely, without their veales, or habiliments, according to the counsell of Marcus Aurelius: and to define

things simply, without any colours, or embellishments, according to the preceptes of Aristotle, and the examples of Ramus: and the most-endlesse altercations; being generally rather Verbal, then reall, and more circumstantiall, then substantiall: will soone grow to an ende. Which end humanitie hasten, if there be any spice of humanitie; diuinitie dispatch, if there be any remnant of diuinitie; heauen accomplish, if the graces of heauen be not locked-vpp; and Earth embrace, if reconciliation hath not forsaken the Earth. If Falshood be weake, as it is weake, why should it longer hold-vpp head: and if Truth be truth, that is, great and mightie, why should it not preuayle? Most-excellent Truth, show thifelse in thy victorious Maiestie; and mauger whatfoeuer encounter of witt, learning, or furie, preuayle puiffantly.

These Notes, if they happen to see light, are especially intended to the particular Vse of a few, whom in affectionate good-will I would wish to stay their wisdomes. Did I not entirely pittie their case, and extraordinarily fauour some commendable partes in them, they should not easely haue cost me halfe thus many lines; euery one worse bestowed, then other, if constancie in errour, be a credit; in disobedience, a bonde; in vice, a vertue; in miserie, a felicitie. He that writt the

premisses, affecteth Truth, as precisely, as any Precisian in Cambrige, or Oxford; and hateth / euen Looue itselfe, in comparison of Truth, which he is euer to tender with a curious deuotion : but a man may be as blinde in ouerseeing, as in seeing nothing : and he may shoote farther from the marke, that ouershooteth, then he that shooteth short, or wide : as alwayes some motespying heades haue so scrupulouly ordered the matter, *Vt intelligendo nihil intelligerent.* I would be loth to fall into the handes of any such captious, and mutinous witts : but if it be my fortune, to light vpon hard interteinement, what remedie? I haue had some little tampering with a kinde of Extortioners, and barratours in my time : and feare not greatly any bugges, but in charitie, or in dutie. ¶ Wrong him not, that would gladly be well-taken, where he meaneth-well; and once for all protesteth, he looueth humanitie with his hart, and reuerenceth diuinitie with his soule : as he would rather declare indeede, then professe in worde. If he erreth, it is for want of knowledge, not for want of Zeale. Howbeit for his fuller contentment, he hath also done his endeuour, to know something on both sides; and laying-aside Partialitie to the persons, hath priuately made the most equall & sincere Analysis of their feuerall allegations, and proofes, that his Logique, and

diuinitie could sett-downe. For other Analyfes he ouer-paffed, as impertinent, or not fpecially materiall. After fuch examination of their auterities, and argumentes, not with a rigorous Censure of either, but with a fauorable Conffruktion of both : Pardon him, though he prefume to deliuer fome part of his animaduerrions in fuch termes, as the infant occafion prefenteth : not for any contentious, or finifter purpofe (the world is too-full of litigious, and barratous pennes) but for the fatisfaction of thofe, that defire them, & the aduertifement of thofe, that regard them. Who / according to any indifferent, or reasonable Analyfis, fhall finde the fharpeft Inuentions, & weightieft Iudgements of their leaders, nothing fo autentically, or current, as was preiudicately expected. It is no peece of my intention, to inffrukt, where I may learne : or to controwle any fuperiour of qualitie, that in confcience may affect, or in Pollicie feeme to countenance that fide. With Martin, and his applauders ; Browne, and his adherents ; Barrow, and his complices ; Kett, and his fektaries ; or whatfoeuer Commotioners of like difpofition, (for neuer fuch a flufh of fcifmatique heads, or here-tique witts), that like the notorious H. N. or the prefumptuous Dauid Gorge, or that execrable Seruetus, or other turbulent rebels in Religion, would be Turkefing, and innouating they wott

not what; I hope it may become me, to be almost as bold; as they haue bene with Iudges, Bishops, Archbishops, Princes, and with whom not? howfoeuer learned, wise, vertuous, reuerend, honorable, or fouerain. Or if my coole dealing with them, be insupportable: I beleue their hoat practising with Lordes, and Princes, was not greatly tolerable. Be, as it may: that is done on both sides, cannot be vndone: and if they weene, they may offende outragiously without iniurie; other are fuer, they may defend moderately with iustice. When that feuen-fold Sheild faileth, my plea is at an ende; albeit my making, or marring were the Client. Whiles the feuen-fold Sheild holdeth-out, he can doe little, that cannot hold it vpp. A strong Apologie, enhableth a weake hand; and a good cause is the best Aduocate. Some sleepe not to all: and I watch not to euery-one. If I be vnderstood with effect, where I wish at-least a demurrer with stayed aduifement, & consultation; I haue my desier, & wil not tediously importune other. I doubt not of many / cōtrary instigatiōs, & some bold examples of turbulēt spirits: but heat is not the meetest Iudge on the bench, or the foundest Diuine in disputation: & in matters of gouernment, but especially in motions of altercatiō, that runne their heads against a strong wall; Take

know
believe
state

165
Supererogation

heede is a fayre thing. Were there no other
 Considerations; the Place, and the Time, are
 two weightie, and mightie Circumstances. It is
 a very-nimble feather, that will needes out-runne
 the wing of the Time; and leaue the fayles of
 regiment behinde. Men are men, and euer had,
 and euer will haue their imperfections: Paradise
 tasted of imperfections: the golden age, when-
 soeuer it was most golden, had some drosse of
 imperfectiōs: the Patriarkes ^{fealt} some fits of
 imperfections: Mofes tabernacle was made ac-
 quainted with imperfectiōs; Salomōs Temple could
 not cleere itselfe frō imperfections: the Primitiue
 Church wanted not imperfections: Constantines
 deuotion founde imperfections: what Reformatiō
 could euer say? I haue no imperfectiōs: or will
 they, that dubb themselues the little flocke, and
 the onely remnant of Israel; say? we haue no
 imperfections. Had they none, as none haue more,
 then some of those Luciferian spirits; it is an
 vnkinde Birde, that defileth his kinde neast; and
 a prouwd husband-man, that can abide no tares
 amōgst wheate, or vpbraideth the Corne with the
 Cockle. There is a God aboue, that heareth
 prayers: a Prince beneath, that tendereth suppli-
 cations: Lordes on both sides, that Patronise good
 causes: learned men, that desire Conference: time,
 to consider vpon essentiall pointes: Knowledge,

that loueth zeale, as zeale muſt reuerence knowledge: Trueth, that diſplayeth, & inueſteth itſelfe: Conſcience, that is a thouſand witneſſes, euen againſt it ſelfe. When the queſtion is *de Re*; to diſpute *de Homine* is ſophiſtical: / or when the matter dependeth in controuerſie, to cauill at the forme is captious: the abuſe of the one, were it proued, abolifheth not the uſe of the other: what ſhould impertinent ſecrecies be reuealed; or needles quarrels picked; or euery propoſition wrinched to the harſheſt ſenſe? What ſhould honeſt mindes, and excellent wittes, be taunted, and bourded, without rime, or reaſon? What ſhould inſolent, and monſtrous Phantaſticality extoll, and glorify itſelfe aboute the cloudes, without cauſe, or effect? When, where, and how ſhould Martin Iunior be purified; Martin Senior faintified; Browne Euangeliftified; Barrow Apoſtolified; Kett Angelified; or the Patriarke of the louely Families, H. N. deified, more then all the world beſide? Were it poſſible, that this age ſhould afford a diuine and miraculous Elias: yet, when Elias himſelfe deemed himſelfe moſt deſolate, and complained hee was left all-alone; there remained thouſandes liuing, that neuer bowed their knees vnto Baal. But Faction, is as ſure a Keeper of Counſell, as a ſiue: Spite, as cloſe a Secretary, as a ſkummer: Innouation, at the leaſt a bright

Angell from heauen: & the foresaid abstrac̄tes of pure diuinity, will needes know, why Iunius Brutus, or Eusebius Philadelphus should rather be Pasquils incarnate, then they. If there be one Abraham in Vr; one Lot in Sodome; one Daniell in Babilon; one Ionas in Niniue; one Iob in Huz; or if there bee one Dauid in the Court of Saule; one Obadia in the Court of Achab; one Ieremy in the Court of Zedechias; one Zorobabel in the Court of Nabuchodonosor; one Nehemias in the Court of Artaxerxes; or any singular blessed One in any good, or bad Court, Citty, State, Kingdome, or Nation; it must be one of them: all other of whatsoeuer dignity, or desert, what but reprobates, apostataes, monsters, tyrants, / pharises, hypocrites, false prophets, belly-gods, worldlinges, rauenuous woolues, crafty foxes, dogs to their vomite, a generation of vipers, limmes of Sathan, Diuels incarnate, or such like. For Erasmus poore *Copia Verborum*, and Omphalius fory furniture of inuectiue and declamatory phrases must come-shorte in this comparison of the rayling faculty. I know no remedy, but the prayer of Charitie, and the order of Authority: whome it concerneth to deale with libels, as with thornes; with phansies, as with weedes; and with heresies, or scismes, as with Hydras heads. It hath bene always one of my obseruations, but especially

of later yeares, since these Numantine skirmishes: The better schollar indeede, the colder scismaticque; & the hotter scismaticque, the worse schollar. What an hideous and incredible opinion did Dauid Gorge conceiue of himself? H. N. was not affraide to insult ouer al the Fathers, Doctors, schoolemē, & new-writers, euer since the Euāgelists, & Apostles: Browne challēged all the Doctours, & other notablest graduats of Cambridge, and Oxford: Kett, though something in Astrology, and Physicke, yet a rawe Deuine, how obstinate, and vntractable in his fantasticke assertions? Barrow taketh vpon him, not onely about Luther, Zuinglius, Oecolampadius, Brentius, and all the vehementest Germane Protestants; but also about Caluin, Viret, Beza, Marlorat, Knox, Meluin, Cartwright, Trauerse, Fenner, Penry, and all our importunatest sollicitours of reformation; howsoeuer qualified with giftes, or reputed amongst their fauorits. Illuminate Vnderstanding, is the rare byrd of the Church; and graund intendimentes come by a certaine extraordinarie, and supernaturall reuelation. One Vnlearned Singularist hath more in him, then ten learned Precisians: giue me the braue fellow, that can carrie / a Dragons taylor after him. Tush, Vniuersitie-learning is a Dunse: and Schoole-diuintie a Sorbonist. It is not Art, or Modesty, that maketh a Rabi

Alphes, or a ringleader of multitudes. Dauid Gorge the Archprophet of the world: H. N. the Archeuangelist of Christ: and Barrow the Archapostle of the Church. Superhappy Creatures, that haue illuminate vnderstanding, and graund intendiments at the best hand. Miraculous Barrow, that so hugely exceedeth his auncients in the pure arte of Reformation. But vndoubtedly his Kingdome cannot flourish long: as he hath blessed his Seniors, so he must be annointed of his Iuniors: me thinkes I see an other, and an other headd, suddainely starting-vpp vpon Hydras shouldiers: farewell H. N. and welcome Barrow: adieu Barrow, and All-haile thou Angelicall spirite of the Gospell, whose face I see in a Christall, more pure, then Purity it selfe: the depression of one, the exaltation of another: the corruption of one, the generation of an other: no feede so fertile, or rancke, as the feede of scisme, and the sperme of heresy. Christ aide his assaulted fort; and blisse the feede of Abraham: and in honor of excellent Arts, and worthy Professions, be it euer saide; The best-learned, are best-aduised. Euen Cardinall Sadolet, Cardinall Poole, and Omphalius, commended the milde, and discreete disposition of Melancthon, Bucer, and Sturmius, when they first stirred in Germany: the Queene Moother of Fraunce, and the Cardinall of Lorraine prayfed Ramus, albeit



hee was known to fauourise the Prince of Condy: Iouius prayfed Reuclin, and Camerarius, as Peucer prayfed Iouius, and Bembus: Oforius prayfed Afcham, as Afcham prayfed Watfon: and who prayfed not Sir Iohn Cheeke; how exceedingly did Cardan praife him? Sir Thomas Smith, her / Maiefties Ambaffadour in France, in the raignes of Henry the Second, Francis the Second, and Charles the Ninth; was honored of none more, then of fome French, and Italian Cardinals, and Bifhops: the Kinges fonnes fauored his fonne, afwell after, as before their Coronation. Neander in his late Chronicle, and later Geographie, praifeth here, & there certaine Papiſtes: and did not Agrippa, Eraſmus, Duarene, and Bodine occaſionally prayſe as many Proteſtants? It was a ſweet, and diuine Vertue, that ſtirred-*vp* looue, & admiration in ſuch aduerſaries: & doubtleſſe they carried an honeſt, & honorable mynde, that forgot themſelues, and their frendes, to doe their enemies reaſon, and Vertue right. A vertue, that I often ſeeke, ſeldome finde; wiſh-*for* in many, hope-*for* in ſome, looke-*for* in few; reuerence in a Superiour, honour in an inferiour; admire in a friend, looue in a foe; ioy, to ſee, or heare, in one, or other. Peruerſe natures are forward to diſguiſe themſelues, and to condemne not onely Curteſie, or humanitie, but euen humilitie, & charitie it ſelfe, with a nick-

name of Newtrality, or Ambidexterity : terme it, what you list, and miscall it at your pleasure : certes it is an excellent and souverain quality, that in a firme resolution neuer to abandon Vertue, or to betray the Truth, stealeth interteinement from displeasure, fauour from offence, looue from enmitie, grace from indignation ; and not like Homers Syren, but like Homers Minerua, traineth Partialitie to a liking of the aduerse Partie ; diffension to a commendation of his Contrarie ; error to an embracement of truth ; and euen Corruption himselfe to an aduancement of valour ; of desert, of integretie, of that morall, and intellectuall good, that so gratiouly insinuateth, and so forciblemproueth itselfe. Oh, that learning were euer married to such / discretion ; witt to such wisdom ; Zeale to such vertue ; contention to such moralitie : and oh, that such priuate gouernement might appeare in those, that pleade most-importunatly for publique gouernement. Oh, that Plato could teach Xenocrates ; Aristotle, Callisthenes ; Theophrastus, Aristotle ; Eunapius, Iamblicus ; to sacrifice to the sweet Graces of Mercurie. What should I vayne, or shadow a good purpose ? Oh a thousand times, that Melanct[h]on could traine Iunius Brutus ; Sturmius, Philadelphus ; Ramus, Beza ; Jewell, Cartwright ; Deering, Martin ; Baro, Barrow ; to embrace the heavenly Graces of Christ, and to

kiffe the hand of that diuine Creature, that paffeth all Vnderftanding. What a felicitie were it, to fee fuch heades as pregnant, as Hydras heades; or Hydras heades as rare as fuch heades?

It is not my meaning, to deface, or preiudice any, that Vnfainedly meaneth well: if Percafe I happen to touch fome painted walles, and godly hypocrites (Godlineffe is become a ftrange Creature, fhould they be truly godly) let them keepe their owne Counfel, and ceafe to affect new reputation by old herefies. The Iewes had their holly-holly-holly *Effeans*: their feperate, / and precise *Pharifes*: their daily regenerate, & Puritane *Hemerobaptiftes*: their feruent, and illuminate *Zelotiftes*: onely in fhape men, in conuerfation Saincts, in infinuation Angels, in profeffion Demi-gods; as descended from heauen, to bleffe the Earth, and to make the Citie a Paradife, that washed their feete. Iefus bleffe good mindes from the blacke enemy, when he attireth himfelfe like an Angell of light. Iudas the Gaulonite, in the reigne of Herode the Great, was an hoat toft, and a maruelous *Zelotift*; when the Emperour Octauian taxing the world, and affeffing Iudea, like other nations, who but he, / in the abundance of his mightie Zeale, was the man, that fett it downe for a Canonick Doctrin: That the people of God, was to acknowledge no other Lord, but God: and that it was a flauifh

bondage, to pay any such exaction, or imposition to Augustus: and hauing giuen-out that principle, for an infallible rule, or rather a sacred law, very vehemently sollicited and importuned the people (as the manner is) to liue, and dye in the cause of their God, and their libertie. But sweet Christ was of a milder & meeker spirite; & both payed tribute himselve to auoyde offence; and set it downe for an eternal Maxime in his Gospell; Giue vnto Cæsar, that belongeth vnto Cæsar, and vnto God, that belongeth vnto God. Zealous Iudas the Gaulonite, and feruent Simon the Galilean, two singular reformers of the Iudaicall Synagoge, pretended fayre for a pure Type, or exquisite platforme of the soundest, exactest, and precisest Hebraicall Discipline: but what prophane Idolatrie so plagued that diuine Common-wealth, as that same scrupulous Zeale? or what made that blessed state, vtterly miserable, but that same vnruely, and tumultuous Zeale; that would not be content with reason, vntill it was too-late? For a time, they supposed themselues, the worthiest, & rarest Creatures in Iudea, or rather the onely men of that state; and in a deepe conceit of a neat & vndefiled puritie, diuorced, or sequestred themselues frō the corrupt societie of other: but alas, that any purified mindes, should pay so dearely, and smartly for their fire Phanfies; which cost

them no lesse, then the most lamentable ouerthrow of their whole Common-wealth. You that haue Languages, and Arts, more than diuers others of good qualitie, and can Vse them with Methode, and a certaine plaufible opinion of great learning, be as excellent, and singular, as you possiblie can for your liues, in a direct course: but be not peeuish; or odd in a crooked balke, that leadeth out of the Kinges high-way, and Christes owne path, into a maze of confusion, and a wilder nesse of desolation: the finall ende of these endlesse Contentions, if they be not otherwise calmed by priuate discretion, or cutt-short by publique order. The first example of diuision, was perillous: and what rankes, or swarmes of insatiable scisme, incontinently followed? It is a mad world, when euey crew of conceited Punyes, puffed-vp with a presumptuous, or phantasticall imagination, must haue their feuerall complot, or faction, as it were a certaine Punicall warre: whose victorie wilbe like that of Carthage against Roome, if it be not the sooner quieted. Remember Iudas the Gaulonite; and forgett not yourselues: inordinate Zeale is a pernicious Reformer: and Destruction, a deare purchase of Plotts in Moone-shine. S. Paule, the heroicall Apostle, could not finde a more excellent way, then Charitie, the most-souerain way of Faith, and Hope: any other

defaigne of puritie, or singularitie, buildeth not
 vp, but pulleth-downe; and of more then a
 Million in hope, prooueth lesse then a cipher in
 effect. What the saluation of Dauid Gorge? a
 nullitie; what the deification of H. N.? a nullitie:
 what the glorification of Kett? a nullitie: what
 the sanctification of Browne? a nullitie: what the
 cōmunitie of Barrow? a nullitie: what the plausi-
 bilitie of Martin? a nullitie: what a thousand
 such popular motiues, allectiues, incensues, aggra-
 uations of the least corruptiō, amplificatiōs of
 the highest felicitie, new landes of promise, ouer-
 flowing with milke, and honny, fooles Paradises,
 glorious innouations; but present shame, wretched
 confusion, vtter ruine, euerlasting infamie, horrible
 damnation, & a most hideous/nullity? Euē the
 great hurly-burly of the Church, the imagined-
 heauenly Discipline; and the very topsy-turuy
 of the state, the pretended-diuline Reformation;
 of two mightie Giants, what can they possiblie
 emprooue themselues, but silly Pigmyes, and a
 most pittifull nullitie? Sweet Charitie, ensweeten
 these bitter garboiles: and seing they so instantly,
 and importunatly affect a perfect Platforme, giue
 them a most-curious, and exquisite Table of pure
 Reformation, euen the true Picture of Thifself.
 Surer Preuention of mischiefe, and ruine, I know,
 none.

I had here bidden Martin in the Vintry farwell, and taken my leaue of this tedious Discourse ; (for no man taketh lesse delight in Inuectiues) ; were I not newly certified of certaine fresh, & frantique practises for the erection of the Synedrion in all haft : whose complotters are weary of melancholy Proiects, and begin to resolute on a cholericke course. Hoat arguments are fiercely threatened, in case the Discipline be not the sooner entertained: but methinks that warme course should scarcely be the stile of pure Mortification : and haply softer fier would make sweeter mault. A little aduifement, doth not much amisse in capitall, or daungerous attemptes. It were well, the blowing bellowes might be entreated to keepe their winde for a fitter opportunitie : or if fier boilyng in the stomacke, must needs breake-out at the mouth ; the best comfort is, the Country affordeth sufficient prouisiō of water, to encounter, the terriblest Vulcanist, that brandisheth a burning sword, or a fierie toung. Howbeit some lookers-on, that feare not greatly the flame, cannot but maruell at the smoake ; and had rather see them, breathing-out the fume of diuine Tobacco, thē of furious rage. I haue read of Politique Iewes, that for their commoditie haue become Christiās : / whom in Spaine, & Italy they terme *Retaliados* : but that Politique Christiās for any benefit, promotiō, or

other regard whatfoeuer, should practife to become Iews, in doctrine, or in difcipline, in earneft, or in deuife, in whole, or in part, it were ftrange, & almoft incredible: if the world were not growen a mōftrous *Retaliado* for his aduantage; & the voyce of Iacob prooued a more gaynfull Strata-geme for the hands of Efau, then euer the hands of Efau were for the voyce of Iacob. I charge not any, that are cleere; (would there were no more Iewifh Pharifes, then Hebrue Worthies); but let not them accufe me for fpeaking, that condemne themfelues for doing; or fhew themfelues Saincts in the Premiffes, that will fcantly prooue honeft men in the Conclufion. All are not ledd with the fame refpectes, that hang on the fame ftring: fome are carried with one confideration, fome with an other: fome tender diuinity, as their foule: fome looue Religion, as their boddy; fome faouour the Gofpell, as their fortune: I doubt not, but fome defier Difcipline for Confcience; and do none coouet Reformation for gayne; or were it impoffible, to point-out a *Retaliado* Conuert, in the whotteft throng of thofe frefh Profelites. If there be no *Retaliados* in Chriftendome, I am glad I haue fayd nothing: if there be, they may fo long mocke other in wordes, that at-laft they will moft deceiue themfelues in deedes. I am beholding to the old Iurie; but

haue no great phanſie to a new, either in London, or elſewhere; when amongſt diuers other histories of Iewiſh enormities, I remember how an auncient Archbiſhop of Canterbury, one Iohn Peckam, was fayne to take order with the Biſhop of London then being, for the diſſolutiō, and deſtruction of all the Synagoges in his Dioces. The leſſe neede of any ſuch order at this inſtant, all the better. I/ will not diſpute, whether a Synedrion preſuppoſe a Synagoge; or whether it be not as inſupportable a yoke for any King, or mightie ſtate, as it was for King Herode, or the Romanes, that found it intolerable: (me thinkes the wiſeſt Sanedrith of a thouſand, ſhould hardly perſuad me, that he is a friend of Princes, or no enimie of Monarchies): but I know ſomuch by ſome, none of the meaneſt Schollers, or obſcureſt men in Europe, touching their opinion of the old, and new Teſtament, of the Thalmud, of the Alcoran, of the Hebrue, Chriſtian, and Turkiſh Histories; that I deeme anything ſuſpicious, and perillous, that anyway inclineth to Iudaifme; as fell an aduerſarie to Chriſtianitie, as the Wolfe to the Lambe, or the Goſhawk to the Dooue. Graunt them an inche; they will ſoone take an ell with the aduantage: and were any part of their Diſcipline one foote, could the boddy of their Doctrine want an head? or might not the Pariſhe prooue a diſorderly Con-

gregation, as bad as a Synagoge, where the Iudicial bench were a Synedrion? The Iewes are a futtle, and mischeeuous people: and haue cunningly inuegled some students of the holly tounge, with their miraculous Cabala from Moses, their omniscious Cosmologie from Salomon, their Caldæan Sapience from Daniell, and other profound Secrets of great pretence: but their liberall gifts bite like their Vfurie; and they are finally founde to interteine them best, that shutt them quite out-of doores, with their Sanedrim, and all. They can tell a precious tale of their diuine Senate; and of their Venerable Meokekim, reuerenced like liuing Lawes: but were all iudgements actually drawn to the diuine Senate, and all lawes solemnely to be fetched from the Venerable Meokekim, as from speaking Oracles; might not these, and their other Metaphysicall mysteries, be /enregistered in the same Thalmud; or might it not prooue a pinching Reformation for Christendome? I haue tasted of their Verball miracles; and cannot greatly commend their personall vertues: but their reall Vfurie is knowen through-out the Christian world, to be an vnmercifull Tyrant, & I feare me, their Consistoriall Iurisdiction would growe a Cruell griper; especially being so Vniuerfally extended in euery Parish, as is intended by the promoters thereof, and powerably armed with that supreme,

& Vncontrowlable authoritie, which they affect in caufes Ecclefiasticall. A braue spirituall motion, and worthie not onely of thefe pidling fturres, but euen of a Troian warre. Yet their Precedent, the Mofaicall Synedrion, was a Ciuil Court, (as is afore mentioned, & would be reconsidered) *cum mero imperio*: and when it became mixt, it was not meerly Ecclefiasticall; & when it became meerly Ecclefiasticall, of a Põtifical Confistory, it foone prooued a Tyrannicall Court; and by your good leaue, was as nimble to encroach vpon Ciuill caufes, being an Ecclefiasticall Court, as euer it was to intermeddle with Ecclefiasticall caufes, being a Ciuill Court. The fineft Methodifts, according to Aristotles golden rule of artificiall Boundes, condemne Geometricall preceptes in Arithmetique, or Arithmeticall preceptes in Geometrie, as irregular, and abufiue: but neuer Artift fo licentioufly heterogenifed, or fo extrauagantly exceeded his prefcribed limits, as Ambition, or Couetice. Euery Miller is ready to conuey the water to his owne mill: and neither the high Prieftes of Ierufalem, nor the Popes of Roome, nor the Patriarckes of Conftantinople, nor the Paftors of Geneua, were euer haftie to binde their owne handes. They that reſearch Antiquities, and inquier into the priuities of Practiſes, ſhall finde an Act of *Præmunire* / is a neceſſarie Bridle in ſome

cases. The first Bishops of Roome, were undoubtedly vertuous men, and godly Pastors: from Bishops they grew to be Popes: what more reuerend, then some of those Bishops; or what more Tyrannicall, then some of those Popes? Aaron, and the high-Priestes of Ierusalem, and of other ceremoniall nations, were their glorious Mirrours; and they deemed nothing too-magnificall, or pompous, to breede an Vniuersall reuerence of their sacred autoritie, and Hierarchie. We are so farre alienated from imitating, or allowing them, that we cannot abide our owne Bishops; yet withall would haue euey Minister a Bishop, and would also be fetching a new patterne from old Ierusalem, the moother-sea of the high-Priesthood. So the world (as the manner is) will needes runne-about in a Circle: pull-downe Bishops; set vp the Minister; make him Bishop of his Parish, and head of the Consistorie, (call him, how you list, that must be his place): what will become of him within a few generations, but a high Priest in a low Ierusalem, or a great Pope in a small Roome? And then, where is the difference betweene him, and a Bishop, or rather betweene him, and a Pope? not so much in the qualitie of his Iurisdiction, when in effect he may be his owne Iudge, as in the quantitie of his Dioces, or temporalities. Or in case he be Politique; as some Popes haue bene

glad for their aduantage, to tyrannise Popularly, so he may chauce be content for his aduancement, to popularise, tyrannically : and shall not be the first of the Clergie, that hath cunningly done it with a comely grace. [Something there must be of a Monarchie in free states : and something there will be of free states, in a Monarchie.] The discreeter, and Vprighter the Curate is, the more circumspectly he will walke, and degenerate the lesse. / Yet what generation without degeneration : or what reuolution without irregularitie? One inconuenience begetteth an other : enormities grow like euill weedes : take heede of a mischiefe : and where then will be the corruptions? Or how shall defection, (acknowledging no primacie, or superioritie in any person, or Court) retire to his first institution : if percase there should growe a Conspiracie in fellowship ; one Consistorie iustifie another for aduantage ; and their whole Synods fall-out in consequence, to be like their Parts? Men may erre : and frailtie will slipp. What should I alledge Historyes, or authorities? It is no newes for infirmitie to fall, when it should stand ; or for appetite to rebell, when it should obey. Euery sonne of Adam, a reed shaken with the wind of passion, a weake Vessell, a Schollar of imperfection, a Master of ignorance, a Doctour of error, a Pastour of concupifcence, a Superintendent

of auarice, a Lord of ambition, a Prince of sinne, a slaue of mortalitie. Flesh is flesh; and Blud a Wanton, a chaungeling, a compound of contrary elementes, a reuoulting and retrog[r]ade Planet, a Sophifter, an hypocrite, an impostour, an Apostata, an heretique; as conuertible as Mercury, as variable as the weather-cock, as lunatique as the Moone; a generation of corruption, a Whore of Babylon, a limme of the world, and an impe of the Diuell. It is their owne argument in other mens case: and why should it not be other mens argument in their case, Vnlesse they can shew a personall Priuiledge *ad imprimendum solum*? They may speake, as they list: termes of sanctification, and mortificatiō, are free for them, that will vse them: but the Common opinion is, euen of the forwardest skirmishers at this day, they doe like other men; and liue like the children of the world, and the brethren of themselues. Some of them haue / their neighbours good leaue, to be their owne Proctors, or Aduocats, if they please. Yet how probable is it, they are now at their very best, and euen in the neatest and purest plight of their incorruption, whiles their mindes are abstracted from worldly thoughts, to a high meditation of their supposed-heauenly Reformation: and whiles it necessarily behoueth them, to stand charily and nicely vpon the credit of their in-

tegritie, sinceritie, preciseness, godlinesse, Zeale, and other vertues? When such respects are ouer, and their purpose compassed according to their harts desier; who can tell how they, or their successours may vse the Keyes; or how they will besturr them with the Sworde? If Flesh prooue not a Pope Ioane; and Bloud a Pope Hildebrand, good enough. Accidents, that haue happened, may happen agayne; and all thinges vnder the Sunne, are subiect to casualtie, mutabilitie, and corruption. At all aduentures, it is a braue Position, to maintaine a Souerain, and supreme autoritie in euery Consistorie; and to exempt the Minister from superiour Censure; like the high Priest, or greatest Pontiffe, whom Dionysius Halycarnasseus calleth *ἀρχιμέννον*. He had neede to be a wise, and Conscionable man, that should be a Parlamēt, or a Chauncerie vnto himselfe: and what a furniture of diuine perfections were requisite in the Church, where so many Ministers, so many spirituall high Iustices of Oier, and Terminer: and euery one a supreme Tribunall, a Synode, a Generall Councill, a Canon Law, a heauenly Law, and Gospel vnto himselfe? If no Serpent can come within his Paradise, safe enough. Or were it possible, that the Pastor, (although a man, yet a diuine man) should as it were by inheritance, or succession, continue a Sainct

from generation to generation: is it also necessary, that the whole company of the redoubted / Seniors, should wage euerlasting warre with the flesh, the world, and the Diuell; and eternally remaine an incorruptible Areopage, without wound, or scarre? Neuer such a Colledge, or fraternitie vpon Earth, if that be their inuiolable order. But God helpe Conceit, that buildeth Churches in the Ayer, and platformeth Disciplines without stayne, or spott.

They complaine of corruptions; and worthily, where Corruptions encroche, (I am no Patron of corruptions): but what a furling sea of corruptiō would ouerflow within few yeares, in case the sword of so great and ample autoritie, as that at Ierusalem most capitall, or this at Geneua most redoubted, were putt into the hand of so little capacitie in gouernement, so little discretion in Discipline, so little iudgement in causes, so little moderation in liuing, so little constancie in saying, or dooing, so little grauitie in behauour, or so little whatfoeuer should procure reuerence in a Magistrate, or establish good order in a Cōmonwealth. Trauaile thorough ten thousand Parishes in England; and when you haue taken a fauourable vew of their substantiallest, and sufficientest Aldermen, tell me in good sooth, what a comely shoue they would make in a Consistorie; or with how solemne a prefence they would furnish a

Councell Table. I beleue, *Grimaldus* did little thinke of any fuch Senatours, whē he writt *de Optimo Senatore*: or did Doctour *Bartholmew Philip*, in his Perfect Counsellour, euer dreame of any fuch Coũsellours? Petty Principalities, petty Tyrants; & fuch Senats, fuch Senatours. Witt might deuife a pleafurable Dialogue betwixt the Leather Pilch, and the Veluet Coate: and helpe to perfuade the better, to deale neighbourly with the other; the other to cōtēt himfelfe with his owne calling. I deny not, but the fhort apron may / be as honeft a man, or as good a Christian, as the long gowne: but methinkes he fould fcantly be fo good a Iudge, or Affiftant in doubtfull caufes: and I fuppose, *Ne futor ultra crepidam* is as fitt a Prouerbe now, as euer it was, fince that excellent Painter rebuked that fawcie Cobler. Euery fubiect is not borne to be a Magiftrate, or Officer: and who knoweth not, whose creature Superiour Power is? They are very-wife, that are wifer then he, by whose diuine permiffion, euery one is that he is. The *Laconicall Ephory* hath lately borne a great fwing, in fome refolute Discourfes of Princes, and Magiftrates; that thought they faued the world from the abomination of defolatiō, when they found-out a bridle, or yoke for Princes: but old Aristotle was a deepe Politician *in diebus illis*: and his Reasons

against that Ephorie (for Aristotle confuted the Ephorie with fonder arguments, then euer it was confirmed to this day) would not yet perhaps be altogether contemned: That fo great iudiciall caufes were committed to men, indued with fo little, or no Vertue: That the poore Plebians for very penurie were eafely bribed, and corrupted: That there enfued an alteration of the ftate, the good Kinges being fayne to currie fauour with their great Mafters, and to become Popular. Whither this would be the end, and may be the marke of thofe, or our Populars, I offer it to their confideration, that are moft intereffed in fuch motions of Ephoryes, and Senioryes. The world is beholding to braue and heroicall myndes, that like Hercules, would praftife meanes to pull-downe Tyranny, fmal, or great: and reforme whole Empires, and Churches, like the three victorious Emperours, furnamed *Magni*, Conftantine, Theodofius, and Charles. Thankes, were an vnfufficient recompense for fo noble intentions. It muft / be a guerdon of value, that should counteruaile their desert, that pretend fo fatherly, and Patronly a care of reedifying Commonwealthes, and Churches. Some voluntarie Counfellours doe well in a State: and men of extraordinary vocation, fingularly qualified for the purpofe, are worth their double weight in gold. When other

fleepe, they watch : when other play, they worke : when other feaft, they fast : when other laugh, they sigh : whiles other are content to be lulled in securitie, and nufled in abufe, they occupie themfelues in deuifing pregnant bondes of affurance, and exquisite models of Reformation. Which muft prefently be aduanced without farther confultatiō : or they haue courage, and will vſe it in mainetenaunce of ſo diuine abſtractes. Melancholie is peremptorie in reſolution : and Choler an ægar Executioner. Were it not for thoſe two inuincible arguments, there might ſtill be order taken with other reaſons, and authorities whatſoeuer. They do well to preſuppoſe the beſt of their owne deſignes, and to giue out Cardes of Fortunate Ilandes, artificially drawen : but as I neuer read, or heard of any people, that committed ſwordes into ſuch hands, but bought their experience with loſſe, and had a hard penyworth of their ſoft cuſhion : ſo in my ſimple conſideration, I cannot conceiue, how Ignorance ſhould become a meeter Officer, then Knowledge ; Affection a more incorrupt Magiſtrate, then Reaſon ; headlong Raſheſſe, or wilfull Stubberneſſe, a more vpriight Iudge, then mature Deliberation ; baſe Occupations enact, and eſtabliſh better orders, then liberall Sciences, or honourable Profeſſions ; (any traffique, howſoeuer current, or aduantageous, hath bene

judged vndecent for a Senatour) ; tagg, & ragg adminifter all things abfolutely-well, with due prouifion againft whatfoeuer poffible / inconueni- ences, where fo many faults are found with perfons of better qualitie ; that incomparablie haue more skil in the adminiftration of publique affaires ; more knowledge, and experience in caufes ; more refpect in proceeding ; more regard of their credit ; more fenfe of daungerous enormities, or contagious abufes ; more care of the flourifhing and durable eftate of the Prince, the Commonwealth, and the Church. Na, I can fee no reafon, according to the beft groundes of Pollicie, that euer I read, but for euery Ciuill tyranny or Pettie mifdemeanour that can poffiblie happen now, the gouernemēt ftanding as it doth ; there muft needes Vpftart a hundred, and a hundred barbarous tyrannies, and huge outrages, were the new platformes, Actes of Par- lament ; and the Complotters, fuch high Com- miffioners, as are described in their owne proiefts, the flourifhes of Vnexperienced wittes. When they haue nothing elfe to alledge, that fhould make them fuperiour, or equall to the prefent Officers ; Confcience muft be their Text, their Gloffe, their Sanctuarie, their Tenure, and their ftrong hold. Indeede Confcience, grounded vpon Science, is a double Ancher ; that neither deceiueth, nor is deceiued : and no better rule, then a regular, or

publique Conscience; in diuinitie ruled by Diuinitie, in law, by Law, in art by Art, in reason by Reason, in experience by Experience. Other irregular, or priuate Conscience, in Publique functions, will fall-out to be but a lawlesse Church; a ship-mans hofe; a iugglers sticke; a phantasticall freehold, and a conceited Tenure *in Capite*: as interchaungeable as the Moone, and as fallible as the winde. How barratous, and mutinous at euery puffe of Suggestion, lett the world iudge. I would there lacked a present Example, as hoat, as fresh: but hoat looue, soone cold, and the fittes of / youth like the showers of Aprill. There goeth a prettie Fable of the Moone, that on a time she earnestly befought her moother, to prouide her a comely garment, fitt and handsome for her boddy: How can that be, sweet daughter, (quoth the moother) sith your boddy neuer keepeth at one certaine state, but changeth euery day in the moneth? That priuate Conscience, the sweet daughter of Phanisie, be the Morall: and the assurance of the Common People, where there wanteth a curbe, the application. What Chameleon so chaungeth his colour, as Affection? or what Polypus so variable, as *Populus, chorus, fluuius*? Doctour Kelke, when he was Vicechauncelour in Cambridge, would often tell the Aduocats, and Proctors in the Consistorie there, that he had a knacke of Conscience, for

Sart.
 1621

their knacke of Law. Truly the man, as he was knowen to be learned, and religious, so seemed to carrie a right-honest and harmelesse minde, and would many times be pleasantly disposed after his blunt manner : but in very deede his Conscience (be it spoken without appeachmēt of his good memorie) other-whiles prooued a knacke, and admitted more inconueniences (some would haue sayd, committed more absurdities) then became the grauitie, and reputation of that iudicious Consistorie. Yet were this new-plotted Consistorie erected, according to the map of their owne imagination, euen vpon the topp of the presumed mount Sion : by the fauour of that goodly prospect I dare vndertake, amongst so many thousand Ministers, with Episcopall, or more then Episcopall autoritie, there must be but a fewe hundred Iudges, like Doctour Kelke ; and a very great dearth of such Assistants, or Seniors, as that flourishing Vniuersitie affourdeth. Alas, many thousands of them, Vnworthy to carrie the Beadles staffe before the one, / or their bookes after the other : how meete for supreme, or free Iurisdiction, I report me vnto you. It is notably sayd of Aristotle in his Politiques : He that would haue the Lawe to rule, would haue a God to rule : but he that committeth the rule to a man, committeth the rule to a beast. The Lawe, is a mynde without appetite ;

a foule without a boddy ; a Iudge without fleshe and bloud ; a ballance without Partialitie ; a meane without extreames. Where Conscience is such a Law, I am for Conscience, let vs professe no other law ; let vs build vs Consistories, and tabernacles vpon that hill of Equitie : let vs dwell in those Elisian fieldes of Integritie : let vs honour that incorruptible scepter of Sinceritie : let vs set the Imperiall crowne vpon the head of that Pollicie ; and let that Discipline weare the Pötificall miter. The world wrongeth itselfe infinitely, if it runneth not to the gaze of that bewtifull *Bel-uedere* ; or refuseth any order frō that sacred Oracle. Otherwise, if men be men, & that Cōsistory, no quire of Angels, or Tribunall of Saincts, but a meeting of neighbours, some of them rude, and grose enough, after the homelyest guise, (for without miraculous illumination, it must necessarily be so in most Parishes) : now I beseech you, hath not Consideration some reason, to feare the Delphicall Sword? And the conuented partie, that was nothing affrayde of the Deane, or the Canons ; they, quoth he, are good Gentlemen, and my faourable frendes, but the Chapter is the Diuell ; would peradventure go nigh-hand to say asmuch for the new Consistorie, as for the old Chapter. Our Minister is a Zealous Preacher : and such, and such my honest neighbours : but God blesse

me from the curst Consistorie. They that skill of Popular humours, and know the course of mechanicall dealinges, or artizan gouernements, or / what you please ; can hardlie hope for any such Paradise, or All-hallowes in hoony-lane, as is plausiblie pourtrayed in some late drawghts of Reformatiō ; sweeter in discourfe, then in practisē. I will not prophecie of Contingēt in speculation : but were their Complot a matter *in esse*, it is possible that euen the Platformers themselues, should haue no such exceeding cause, to ioye in their redoubted Seniors. Some Potestats are queint men, and will by fittes beare a braine, maugre the best reason or Purest Conscience in a Consistorie. And God knoweth, how the People would digest it, (especially after some little triall of their inexorable rigour, and other furly dealing) that their neighbour Whatchicall, sometime no wifer then his fellowes, and such, and such a Free-holder of this, and that homely occupation, (somewhat base for a Senatour) should so iollily perke on the bench, amongst the Fathers Conscript, when some, that haue a state of inheritance, or maintaine themselues vpon ciuiler trades, must humbly wait at the barre, and yeeld themselues obedient to the sterne commandements of those fage benchers. Iwis, the penny is a strong argument with such natures : and he that carrieth

the heauieft purfe, how vnmeete foeuer he may feeme for a Confiftorie, thinketh himfelfe mightily wronged, Vnleffe he be taken for the beft, or one of the beft in the Parifh: and if for his countenance, or other charitable refpect, he will not fticke fometime to pleasure a good fellow, or a poore neighbour, (fome good fellowes are kill-cowes, and fome poore neighbours all-hart) he may perhaps get fom hardy partakers, & bare himfelfe for as mighty a man in the borrowgh, or village, as fome of the forefaid redoubted Potestats. How that would be allowed in Confiftorie, or how a thoufand fuites, quarrels, vproes, & hurliburlyes might be pacified, / yet vn-prouided-for, or vnthought-vpon by the compendious Summits; it would be confidered in time, whiles there is leysure from Practife. For after the Confiftorie is once vp; in fuch a sweating harueft of moft-bufie bufineffe, a fimple Pragmatique may eafely Prognofiticate, how fmall a remnant of leysure will remaine for confideration. There was much adooe, & otherwhiles little helpe, firft at Ierufalem, with one Synedrion; and then at Geneua with one Seniorie, the two onely exemplary Prefbiteryes: (for other Primitiue Elderfhips will not fit the turne: what a wonderfull fturre would one, and fome 52000. Confiftories make in England? Were not our Reformation likely to prooue a greater.

Sweat, or a mightier Drowt, then any in Graftons, Stowes, or Holinheads Chronicle? Martin, vnder correction of your high Court of Conscience, giue me leaue to bethinke me attonce, vpon the fierworke of your Discipline, and Phaetons regiment, in the hoat Countreyes of the Orient. When his braue defeigne came to the Execution; *solitaque iugum grauitate carebat*; a light beginning, a heaue ending.

Nec scit, quâ sit iter; nec si sciat, imperet illis: and so forth: (it is not conceit, or courage, but skill, and authoritie, that manageth gouernement with honour): what was the issue of that yonkerly & presumptuous enterprife, but a Diluge of fier, as ruthfull, and horrible, as Deucalions Diluge of water.

Magnæ pereunt cum mænibus Vrbes:

Cumq. ; suis totas populis incendia Gentes

In cinerem vertunt. You can best translate it yourselfe: and I leaue the warm application to the hoat Interpreter: with addition of that short, but weightie, and most remarkable aduertisement; *Poenam | Phaeton, pro munere poscis.* Phaeton thou desirest thy ruine for thy aduaancement: and Martin, thou affectest, thou wottest not what: a Discipline? a confusion? a Reformation? a deformation: a Salue? a plague: a Blisse? a curse: a Commonwealth? a Common-

wo: a Happy, and Heauenly Church? a wretched, and hellish Synagogue. Amount in imagination as high, as the hawtiest conceit can aspire; and plat-forme the most-exquisite deseignes of pure Perfection, that the nicest curiositie can deuise: were not the wisest on your side, most simplie-simple in weying the Consequents of such antecedents, they would neuer so inconsideratly labour their owne shame, the miserie of their brethren, the desolatiō of the Ministry, & the destructiō of the Church. Good Martin, be good to the Church, to the Ministry, to the state, to thy country, to thy patrons, to thy frends, to thy brethren, to thifelse: and as thou loouest thifelse, take heede of old Puritanisme, new Anabaptisme, & finall Barbarisme. Thou art young in yeares, I suppose: but younger in enterprise, I am assured. Thy age in some fort pleadeth thy pardon: and couldest thou with any reasonable temperance aduise thifelse in time, as it is high time to assuage thy stomachous and ouerlashing outrage; there be fewe wise men of qualite, but would pittie thy rash proceeding, and impute thy wanton scurrilous Veine to want of Experience, and Iudgement, which is feldome ripe in the Spring. I will not stand to examine the Spirite, that speaketh, or endighteth in such a phraze: but if that were the tenour of a godly, or zealous stile, methinkes some

other Sainct, or godly man, should some way haue vsed the like elocution before: vnlesse you meant to be as singular in your forme of writing, as in your manner of censuring; & to publish as graue an Innouation in wordes, as/in other matters. Some spirituall motion it was, that caused you so sensible to applie your ruffling speach, and whole method, to the feeding and tickling of that humour, that is none of the greatest students of Diuinitie, vnlesse it be your Diuinitie; nor any of the likelyest creatures to aduance Reformation, vnlesse it be your Reformation. But whatsoeuer your motion were, or howsoeuer you perswaded yourselfe, that a plausible and roisterly course would winne the harts of good fellowes, and make ruffians become Precisians, in hope to mount higher then Highgate, by the fall of Bishopsgate; some of your well-willers hold a certaine charitable opiniō, that to reforme yourselfe, were your best Reformatiō. Good Discipline would doe many good; and doe Martin no harme; had he leysure from trainyng of other, to trayne himselfe, and as one termed it, to trimme his owne beard. Howbeit in my Method, Knowledge would go before Practise, and Doctrīne before Discipline. I challenge fewe, or none for learning, which I rather looue as my Frēd, or honour as my Patron then professe as my Facultie: but some approoued good

Schollars of both Vniuersities, and some honorable wifemen of a higher Vniuersitie, take Martin to be none of the greatest Clarkes in England; and maruell, how he should presume to be a Doctour of Discipline, that hath much-a-doe to shewe himselfe a Master of Doctrin. For mine owne part, I hope he is a better Doctrinist, then Disciplinist: or else I must needs conclude; Pride is a buisie man, and a deeper Counsellour of states, then of himselfe. Publique Proiectes become publique persons; and may doe well in some other, being well employed: but priuate persons, and the common crewes of Platformers, might haue most vse of priuate designements, appropriat to their owne Voca / tion, Profession, or qualitie. When I finde Martin as neat a reformer of his owne life, as of other mens actiōs; it shal go hard, but I wil in som meafure proportion my cōmendation to the singularite of his desert; which I would be glad to crowne with a garland of present, and a diademe of future prayse. For I long to see a Larke without a creast; and would trauaile farre, to discoouer a Reformer without a fault; or onely with such a fault, as for the rarenesse should deserue, or for the strangenesse might challenge, to be Chronicled, like the Eclipse of the Sunne. The State Demonstratiue, not ouerlaboured at this instant, would fayne be employed in blafoning a

creature of such perfections: and the very soule of Charitie thirsteth to drinke of that cleere *Aqua Vitæ*. It is not the first time, that I haue preferred a Gentleman of deedes, before a Lord of wordes: and what if I once by way of familiar discourse sayd? I was a Protestant in the Antecedent, but a Papist in the Consequent: for I liked Faith in the Premisses, but wished works in the Conclusion: as S. Paul beginneth with Iustification, but endeth with Sanctification: & the Schoole-men reconcile many Confutations in one distinction; We are iustified by Faith apprehensiuely; by Workes declaratiuely; by the blood of Christ effectiuely. I hope, it is no euill signe, for the flower to flourish, for the tree to fructifie, for the fier to warme, for the Sunne to shine, for Truth to embrace Vertue, for the intellectuall good to practise the Morall good, for the cause to effect. He meant honestly, that said merrily; He tooke S. Austins, and S. Gregories by Pauls, to be the good frendes of S. Faithes vnder Pauls. What needeth more? If your Reformation be such a restoratiue, as you pretende; what letteth, but that the world should presently behold a Visible difference betweene the fruites of the / pure and the corrupt diet? Why ceaseth the heauenly Discipline, to penne her owne Apologie, not in one or two scribled Pamflets of counterfait

Complements, but in a thousand liuing Volumes of heauenly Vertues? Diuine Causes were euer wont to fortifie themfelues, and weaken their aduersaries, with diuine Effectes, as conspicuous, as the brightest Sunne-shine. The Apostles, and Primitiue founders of Churches were no railers, or scoffers: but painfull traualiers, but Zelous Preachers, but holly liuers, but fayre-spoken, mild, and loouing men, euen like Moses, like Dauid, like the sonne of Dauid; the three gentlest persons, that euer walked vpon Earth. Where soeuer they became, it appeared by the whole manner of their meeke, and sweet proceeding that they had bene the seruants of a meeke Lord, and the Disciples of a sweet Master: in so much, that many nations, which knew not God, interteined them, as the Ambassadors, or Oratours of some God; and were mightily perswaded, to conceiue a diuine opinion of him, whom they so diuinely Preached; & euen to beleue, that he could be no lesse, then the sonne of the great God. Their miracles got the harts of numbers: but their Sermons, and Orations, were greater wonders, then their miracles, and woon more rauished soules to heauen. Their Doctrine was full of power: their Discipline full of Charitie: their Eloquence celestiall: their Zeale inuincible: their Life inuiolable: their Conuersation loouing: their Profession, Humilitie; their Practise, Humili-

tie; their Conquest, Humilitie. Read the sweet Ecclesiasticall Hyftories, replenished with many cordiall narrations of their fouerain Vertues: and peruse the most rigorous Censures of their professed enemies, Plinie, Suetonius, Tacitus, Antoninus, Symachus; Lucian, Libanius, / Philostratus, Eunapius, or any like, Latinist, or Grecian, (I except not Porphyrie, Hierocles, or Iulian himselfe): and what Christian, or heathen iudgement, with any indifferencie can denie, but they always demeaned themselues, like well-affected, faire-conditioned, innocent, and kinde persons; many wayes gracious, and somewayes admirable? Peace was their warre: Vnitie their multiplication: good wordes, and good deedes, their edifying instruments: a generall humanitie toward all, where-soeuer they trauailed; and a speciall beneficence toward euery one, with whom they conuersed, one of their Souerain meanes, for the Propagation of Christianitie. They knew his mercifull, and Godfull meaning, that in an infinite and incomprehensible looue, descended from heauen to faue all vpon Earth, and remembred how graciously his diuine Selfe voutfaued, to conuerse with Publicans, and other sinners: what a sweet and peerlesse Example of humblest Humilitie he gaue his Disciples, when with his owne immaculate handes he washed their feete: how applicably he framed

himselfe to the proper disposition of euery Nation in drawing vnto him the Magicians of the East, with the wondrous sight of a new Starre ; in moouing the Iewes with miracles, and Parables ; in shewing himselfe a Prophet, & the very Messias, to the Samaritans ; in sending eloquent Paule to the eloquent Grecians, Zealous Peter to the deuout Hebrues, and vertuous Romans, his brother Andrew to the stout Scythians, incredulous Thomas to the infidell Parthians, and so forth : what a loouing, and precious deare Testament he left behinde him, and with how vnspeakable fauour he bequeathed and disposed the rich hereditaments, and inestimable gooddes of his kingdome : how neerly it concerned the members of one boddy, / without the least intestine disagreement, or faction, to tender and cherrish one another with mutuall indulgence : how frutefully the militant Church had already encreased by Concord, like a Plant of the triumphant Church, whose blissefull consort incomparably passeth the sweetest harmonie. The effect of such diuine motions was heauenly : and whiles that celestiall course continued, with an inuiolable consent of Vnited mindes, euen in some diffension of opinions, (for there was euer some difference of opinions) the Gospell reigned, and the Church flourishd miraculously. It would make the hart of Pietie, to weepe for ioyfull

compassion, to remember how the Bloud of those, and those most-patient, but more glorious Martyrs, that might be flaine, but not vanquished, was the Seede of the Church. The Church, that grew victorious, and mightie, by the beheading of Paule, and Iames ; by the crucifying of Peter, Andrew, Philip, and Simon ; by the stoning of Stephen ; by the burning of Marke, and Barnabas ; by the slaying of Bartholmew ; by the murdering of Thomas with a dart, of Mathew with a sword, of Matthias with an axe, of Iames Alphæus with a club ; of how many renowned Martyrs with how many cruell and tyrannicall torments ; immortal monuments of their invincible Faith, and most honorable Constancie. When Asperitie, and Discorde, degenerating from that Primitiue order ; tooke an other course, and began to proceede, more like Furies of hell, then Saincts of the Church, or honest neighbours of the world ; alas, what followed ? And vnlesse we retire to our principles, although mischief vpon mischief be bad enough, yet ruine vpon ruine will be worse. It is not a ruffianly stile, or a tumultuous plot, that will amend the matter : some Apostolicall vertues would doe well ; and that-same / Euan-gelicall humilitie were much-worth. In the meane season, fuerly reuerend Bishops, and learned Doctours, albeit corruptible men, should be

meeter to adminifter or gouerne Churches, then luftie Cutters, or infufficient Plotters, albeit reformed creatures. Sweet Martin, afwell Iunior, as Senior, (for Iuniours, and Seniours are all one, as old Mafter Raye fayd in his maioraltie) and you fweet whirlwinds, that fo fiercely befturr you at this infant ; now agayne, and agayne I befeech you, either be content to take a fweeter courfe ; or take all for me. My intereft in thefe caufes is fmall : and howfoeuer fome bufie heades looue to fet themfelues aworke, when they might be otherwife occupied, yet by their fauours, there is a certaine thing, that paffeth all Vnderftanding ; which I commend Vniuerfally vnto all, efpecially vnto my friends, and fingularly vnto mifelfe. *Nulla falus bello : pacem te pofcimus omnes.* No Law to the Feciall Law ; nor any Conqueft to Pacification. Would Chrif, Reformation could be entreated to begin at itfelfe ; and Discipline would be fo good, as to fhew by example of her owne houfe, wher ſhe inhabiteth, and conforteth, what a Precious, and heauenly thing it were for a whole kingdome, to liue in fuch a celeftiall harmony of Pure Vertues, and all perfections. Theoricks, and Ideas are quickly imagined in an afpiring phantafie : but an inuiolable Practife of a diuine excellencie in humane frailtie, without exceffe, defect, or abufe, doubtleffe were

a Christall worth the seeing, and a glorious Mirrour of eternall Imitation. When Contemplation hath a little more experience, it shall finde, that Action is scantly so smooth, and nimble a creature, as Speculation : two notable Presidēts *in Concreto*, more rare, then twentie singular Types *in abstracto* : they that shoote beyond the marke, in / imagination, come short in tryall : good, intētions were neuer too-rife, & the best intentiōs haue gone astray. All men are not of one mould : there is as great difference of Ministers and Aldermen, as of other persons : euen where the spirite is strong, the flesh is sometime founde weake enough ; and the world, is a world of temptations, murmurings, offences, quarrels, trespasses, crimes, and continuall troubles in one sort or other.

If the precisest, and most scrupulous Treatises haue much-adooe to vphold the credit of any perfection, or estimation, with their owne associats ; (how many heads, so many plottes) what may Reason conceiue of the assurance, or maturitie of their iudiciall or other Morall Proceedings *in Esse* ? When His, and His Scripture, after some prettie pausing, is become Apocryphall with his, and his owne adherents, whose writing was Scripture with many of them ; how can any of them ascertain, or resolute themselues of the Canonick incorrup-

tion, or autenticall omnifufficiencie of his, or his actuall gouernement? When euen He, that within these fewe yeares was alledged for Text, hath so emprooued his autoritie with a number of his feruentest brethren, that he will now be scantly allowed for a current Glossẽ; why should defeated Affection any longer delude itselfe with a preiudicate & vayne imagination of an Alchimistickall Discipline, not so sweet in conceit, as sower in prooffe; and as defectiue in needfull prouision, as excessiue in vnneedfull presumption? If Second cogitations be riper, and sounder, then the first; may not a Third, or Fourth consultations take more & more aduifement? If Bishops-gate be infected, is it vnpossible for Alders-gate to be attainted? and if neither can be long cleere in an Vniuersall plague of Corruption, what reason/hath Zeale to fly from Gods blessing into a warme Sunne: What a wisdome were it, to change for the worfe? or what a notorious follie were it, to innouate, without infallible assurance of the better? What Politique state, or considerate people, euer laboured any Alteration, Ciuill, or Ecclesiasticall, without Pregnant euidence of some singular, or notable Good, as certaine in consequence, as important in estimation? To be short, (for I haue already bene ouer-long, and shall hardlie qualifie those headdie younkens with

any Discourfe) had Martin his luft, or Penry his wifh, or Vdal his mynde, or Browne his will, or Ket his phanfie, or Barrow his pleasure, or Greenwood his harts-defire, or the fresheft Practitioners their longing, (euen to be Iudges of the Confiftorie, or Fathers Conscript of Senate, or *Domine fac totum*, or themfelues wott not what) ; there might fall-out five hundred practicable cafes, and a thoufand difputable queftions in a yeare, (the world muft be reframed anew, or fuch points decided) wherewith they neuer difquieted their braynes, and wherein the learnedeft of them could not fay A. to the Arches, or B. to a Battledore. If the grauer motioners of Difcipline (who no doubt are learned men, and might be wifer : but M. Trauers, M. Cartwright, Doctour Chapman, and all the grayer heads begin to be ftale with thefe Noouellifts) haue bethought themfelues vpon all cafes, and cautels in Practife, of whatfoeuer nature, and haue thorowly prouided againft all poffible mifchieffs, inconueniences, and irregularities, afwell future, as prefent ; I am glad they come fo well prepared : fuerly fome of the earnefteft and egreft follicitours, are not yet fo furnifhed. Wordes are good fellowes, and merry men : but in my poore opinion, it were not amiffe for fome fwearing, and fierce / doers at this infant, that would downe with Clement,

and vp with Hildebrand, either to know more at home, or to sturr leffe abroad. It is no trifling matter in a Monarchie, to hoise-vp a new Autoritie, like that of the Iewish Consistorie aboute Kinges, or that of the Lacedemonian Ephorie aboute Tyrants, or that of the Romane Senate aboute Emperours. Howbeit if there be no remedie, but M. Fier must be the Pastour, M. Aier the Doctour, goodman Water the Deacon, and goodman Earth the Alderman of the Church; let the young Calfe, and the old Affe draw Cuttes, whither of their heads shall weare the garland. And thus much in generalitie touching Martinizing, being vrged to defend it, if I durst: but for feare of indignation I durst not. The feuerall particularities, and more gingerly nicities of rites, signes, termes, and what not? I referre to the discussion of professed Deuines: or reserue for more leysure and fitter occasion.

As for that new-created Spirite, whom double V. like an other Doctour Faustus, threateneth to coniure-vpp at leysure, (for I must returne to the terrible creature, that subscribeth himselfe. Martins Double V. and will needes also be my Tittle-tittle) were that Spirite disposed to appeare in his former likenesse, and to put the Necromancer to his purgation, he could peraduenture make the

coniuring wifard forfake the center of his Circle, and betake him to the circumference of his heeles. Simple Creature, iwis thou art too-young an Artift *to coniure him* vp, that can exorcife thee downe: or to *lamback him* with *ten yeares* preparation, that can lamfkin thee with a dayes warning. Out vpon thee for a cowardly lambacker, that stealeft-in at the back doore; and thinkeft to filch aduantage on the back wing. / Knaues are backbiters; whores bellybiters; and both fheepebiters. Pedomancie fitter for fuch Coniurers, then either Chiromancie, or Necromancie, or any Familiar Spirite, but contempt. It is fome-boddyes fortune, to be haunted with backfrendes: and I could report a ftraunge Dialogue betwixt the Clarke of Backchurch, and the Chaunter of Pancridge, that would make the better vifard of the two to blufh: but I fauour modeft eares; and a thousand honeft tongues will iuftifie it to thy face, Thou art as it were a grofe Idiot, and a very *Affe in presenti*, to imagine that thou couldeft go fcofffree in this fawcy reckoning, although the partie coniured fould fay nothing, but Mum. Honeftie goëth neuer Vnbacked: and Truth is a fufficient Patron to itfelfe: and I know One, that hath written a Pamflet, intituled *Cockalilly*, or *The white fon of the Black Art*. But he that can *massacre Martins wit*, (thou remembreft thine owne phrafe) can rott Pap-hatchets braine:

and he that can *tickle Mar-prelate with taunts*, can twitch double V. to the quicke: albeit he threaten no lesse, then the siege of Troye in his Note-booke; and his penne resounde, like the harnessed woombe of the Troian horse. I haue seene a broad sword stand at the doore, when a poinado hath entered: and although I am neither Vlysses, nor Outis, yet perhaps I can tell, how, No-boddy may doe, that someboddy cannot doe. Polyphemus was a mightie fellow, and coniured Vlysses companions into excrements: (few Giants euer so hideous, as Polyphemus): but poore Outis was euen with him, and No-boddy coniured his goggle eye, as well. I prey-thee sweet Pap, insult not ouer-much vpon quiet men: though my penne be no-boddy at a hatchet, and my tongue lesse then no-boddy at a beetle; yet Patience looueth not to be made a / cart of Croiden; and no such libbard for a liuely Ape, as for dead Silence. The merry Gentleman deuifeth to disport himselfe, and his Copesmates, with a pleasurable conceit of *quaking eares*: and *all my workes, at least six sheetes in quarto, called by miselfe, The first tome of my familiar Epistle*: two impudent lyes, and so knowen notoriously. He might as truly forge any lewd, or villanous report of any man in England; and for his labour challenge to be preferred to the Clarkship of the whettstone: which he is hable to main-

taine sumptuously, with a mint of queint, and Vncouth Similes, daintie monsters of Nature. I must deale plainly with the Spawne of rāke Calumnie : his knauish, & foolish malice palpably bewrayeth it self in most-odious fictions ; meet to garnish the forefayd famous office of the whetstone. But what sayth his owne couragious Penne, of his owne aduenturous eares? *If ripping-^{up} of Liues make sport, haue with thee knuckle deepe: it shal neuer be sayd, that I dare not venter myne eares, where Martin hazards his necke.* Some men are not so prodigall of their eares, how lauish soeuer Martin may seeme of his necke; & albeit euery mā cannot compile such graund Volumes as Euphues, or reare such mightie tomes, as Paphatchet; yet he might haue thought, other poore men haue tongues, and pennes to speake something yet, when they are prouoked vnreasonably. But loosers may haue their wordes, and Comedians their actes : such drie bobbers can lustely strike at other, and cunningly rapp themselues. He hath not played the Vicemaster of Poules, and the Foolemaster of the Theater for naughtes; himselfe a mad lad, as euer twanged, neuer troubled with any substance of witt, or circumstance of honestie, sometime the fiddle-sticke of Oxford, now the very bable of London; would fayne forfooth haue some / other esteemed, as all men

Sat
 de pance
 versen en

100

100

value him. A workeman is easely defcried by his termes: euery man speaketh according to his Art: I am threatened with a Bable, and Martin menaced with a Comedie: a fit motion for a Iester, and a Player, to try what may be done by employmēt of his facultie: Bables & Comedies are parlous fellowes *to decipher, and discourage men*, (that is the Point) with their wittie flowtes, and learned Ierkes; enough to lash any man out-of countenance. Na, if you shake the painted scabbard at me, I haue done: and all you, that tender the preferuation of your good names, were best to please Pap-hatchet, and see Euphues be-times, for feare lesse he be mooued, or some One of his Apes hired, to make a Playe of you; and then is your credit quite vn-done for euer, and euer: Such is the publique reputation of their Playes. Hé must needes *be discouraged*, whom they *decipher*. Better, anger an hundred other, then two such; that haue the Stage at commaundement, and can furnish-out Vices, and Diuels at their pleasure. Gentlemen, beware of a *chafing-penne, that sweateth-out whole realmes of Paper*, and whole Theaters of Iestes: tis auenture, if he dye not of the Paper-sweat, should he chauce to be neuer so little ouerchafed. For the Iest-dropfie is not so peremptorie. But no point of Cunning, to the *Tale of the Tubb*: that is the profounde



myfterie, and the very Secret of Secrets. The sweet Sisters Answer, *that in her conscience thought Lecherie the Superficies of finne*, (a rare word with women, but by her aunswer she should seeme to be learned): the true Tale of one of Martins godly sonnes, *that hauing the Companie of one of his sisters in the open fieldes, said he would not smother-up finne, and deale in hugger-mugger against his conscience*: (the Historiographer hath many priuie intelligences): the sober tale of / the *Eldest Elder, that receiued fortie Angels at his Table, where he sat with no lesse then fortie good dishes of the greatest dainties, in more pompe, then a Pope*: (he was not of the starued Pythagorean, or Platonicall diet: but liberall exhibition may maintaine good hospitalitie): the *Zelous Looue letter, or a Corinthian Epistle to the widow, as honest a woman, as euer burnt malt*: (the wooer, or the Register of Aretines Religion): *the holie Othe of the Martinist, that thinking to sweare by his conscience, swore by his Concupiscence*: (did not he forget himselfe, that expressly affirmed? *Martin will not sweare: but with In deede, In sooth, and In truth, hele cogg the dye of deceit*:) these, and the rest of those bawdie Inuentions, wherewith that brothellish Pamflet floweth, smell somewhat strongly of the Pumpe; and shewe the creditie of the Autor, that dareth alledge any impudent, pro-

phane, or blasphemous fiction to serue his turne. So he may soone make-yp the autentically Legendary of his *Hundred merrie Tales* : as true peradventure, as Lucians true narrations ; or the heroically histories of Rabelais ; or the braue Legendes of Errant Knights ; or the egregious pranks of Howleglasse, Frier Rush, Frier Tuck, and such like ; or the renowned *Bugiale* of Poggius, Racellus, Lufcus, Cincius, and that whole Italian crew of merry Secretaryes in the time of Pope Martin the fift ; of whom our worshipfull Clarkes of the whetstone, Doctour Clare, Doctour Bourne, M. Scoggin, M. Skelton, M. Wakefield, diuers late Historiologers, and haply this new Tale-founder himselfe, learned their most-wonder-full facultie. *Committing of matrimonie ; carousing the sapp of the Church ; cutting at the bumme Carde of conscience ; besmearing of conscience ; spelling of Our Father in a horne-booke ; the railing Religion ;* and a whole sinke of such arrant phrascs, fauour whotly / of the same Lucianicall breath, & discoouer the minion Secretarie aloofe. Faith, quoth himselfe, thou wilt be caught by thy stile : Indeede what more easie, then to finde the man by his humour, the Midas by his eares, the Calfe by his tongue, the goofe by his quill, the Play-maker by his stile, the hatchet by the Pap? Albertus Secrets, Poggius Fables, Bebelius iestes, Scoggins tales, Wake-

fields lyes, Parfon Darcyes knaueries, Tarletons trickes, Eldertons Ballats, Greenes Pamflets, Euphuus Similes, double V^s phrafes, are too-well knowen, to go vnknowen. Where the Veine of Braggadocio is famous, the arterie of Pappadocio cannot be obscure. Gentlemen, I haue giuē you a taft of his Sugerloafe, that weeneth Sidneyes daintyes, Afchams cōfites, Cheekes fuccats, Smithes cōferues, and Mores iunkets, nothing comparable to his pap. Some of you dreamed of Electuaries of Gemmes, and other precious reftoratiues; of the quinteffence of Amber, & Pearle diffolued, of I wott not what incredible delicacies: but his Gemmemint is not alwayes current; and as bufie men, fo painted boxes, and gallipots muft haue a Vacation. Yet wellfare the sweet hart of Dia-pap, Dia-fig, and Dia-nut, three foueraine Defenfatiues of the Commonwealth, and three cordiall Comfortatiues of the Church. It is a good hearing, when good fellowes haue a care of the Commonwealth, and the Church: and a godly motion, when Interluders leaue penning their pleafurable Playes, to become Zealous Ecclefiasticall writers. *Bona fide*, fome haue written notable againft Martinifme: (it were a bufie tafke for the credibleft Precifian, to empeach the credit of Doctour Bancroft, or Doctour Sutcliff): but this Mammaday hath excellently knocked himfelfe on

For a little

Sat
in the circle

the sconsfe with his owne hatchet. I will cast away no more inke vpon a Com/pounde of simples. The Pap is like the hatchet: the fig like the nut: the Country-cuff like the hangmans apron: the dog like the dog: John Anoke, and Iohn Aftile like the baily of Withernam: the signe of the Crabtre cudgell like twackcoate Lane: Martins hanging like Pappadocios mowing: Huff, Ruff, and Snuffe, the three tame ruffians of the Church, like double V: neuer a laye in the barrell, better herring: the beginning, the midft, and the end, all in one pickle. Some rofes amongst prickes, doe well: and some lillyes amongst thornes, would haue done no harme. But Enuie hath no fanfie to the rofe of the garden: and what careth Malice for the lilly of the Valley? Would, fayre Names were felles, and charmes againft fowle Affections: and in fome refpectes I could wish, that Diuinitie would giue Humanitie leaue to conclude otherwise, then I must. I could in curtesie be content, and in hope of Recōciliation defirous, to mitigate the harshett sentences, and mollifie the hardest termes. But can Truth lye: or Discretion approue follie: or Iudgement allowe Vanitie: or Modestie abide Impudencie: or good manners footh bad speaches? He that penned the abouue-mentioned *Cock-alilly*, saw reason to display the Black Artift in his collier colours: and thought it most vn-

reasonable, to suffer such light and emptie vessels, to make such a lowde, and prowde rumbling in the ayre. Other had rather heare the learned Nightingale, then the Vnlearned Parrat ; or taft the wing of a Larke, then the legge of a Rauē. The finest wittes preferre the loofest period in M. Afcham, or Sir Philip Sidney, before the trickiest page in Euphues, or Pap-hatchet. The Muses, shame to remember some freshe quaffers of Helicon : and which of the Graces, or Vertues blusheth not, to name some lustie tospots / of Rhetorique? The stately Tragedie scorneth the trifling Comedie : and the trifling Comedie flowteth the new Ruffianisme. Wantonneffe was neuer such a swill-bowle of ribaldry : nor Idleneffe euer such a carowfer of knauerie. What honest mynde, or Ciuill disposition, is not accloied with these noisome, & nasty gargarismes? Where is the polished and refined Eloquence, that was wont to bedeck, and embellish Humanity? Why should learning be a niggard of his excellent gifts, when Impudencie is so prodigall of his rascall triftraff? What daintie, or neat Iudgement beginneth not to hate his old looue, and loath his auncient delight, the Presse, the most-honorable Presse, the most-villanous Presse? Who smileth not at those, and those trim-trammes of gawdie wittes, how flourishing Wittes, how fading witts?

Who laugheth not at *Il'e, Il'e, Il'e*; or gibeth not at some hundred Pibalde fooleryes, in that hare braind Declamation? They whom it neerelyeft pincheth, cannot silence their iust disdaine: and I am forcibly vrged to intimate my whole Censure, though without hatred to the person, or derogation from any of his commendable gift, yet not without speciall dislike of the bad matter, and generall condemnation of the vile forme. The whole Worke, a bald Toy, full of stale, and wooden Iestes; and one of the most paltry thinges, that euer was published by graduate of either Vniuersitie: good for nothing but to stop mustard pottes, or rubbe gridirons, or feather rattes neastes, or such like homely vse. For Stationers are already too-full of such Realmes, and Commonwealthes of Waft-paper, and finde more gaine in the lillypot blanke, then in the lillypot Euphued: a day, or two fine for sheetes, and afterward good for grosers. *Vanitas vanitatum*, the some of grudge, the froth of leuitie, the / scum of corruption, and the very scurfe of rascallitie: nothing, worthy of a Schollar, or a Ciuill Gentleman: altogether phantastically, and fonde, without ryme, or reason: so odly hudled, and bungled together, in so madbraine fort, and with so braineficke stufte, that in an Ouer flowe of so many friuolous, and ridiculous Pamflets, I

scarcely know any One in all points, so incomparably vayne and absurde, whereunto I may resemble that most toyishe and piperly trifle, the fruite of an addle, and lewd wit, long-since dedicated to a dissolute, and desperate Licentioufnesse. Oh what a *Magnifico* would he be, were his purse as heauie, as his head is light, and his hart franke? Euen that same Very Mirrour of Madnesse, hangeth together with some more coherence of reason; and smelleth not so rankly of the Tauerne, the Alehouse, the Stewes, the Cuckingstoole, or other such honest places, as that drunkē, and shamelesse Declamation; Vnbeseeming any, but an Oratour of Bedlam, a Rhetorician of Bridewell, or a Discourser of Primerose hill. And although that same Frēch Mirrour, be *ex Professo* deuised in a mad garish Veyne, and stuffed with geere homely enough, fit for a Libertine & frantique Theame: yet doth it no[t] so basely borrow of the Ruffians bagge, the Tapsters spigot, the Pedlars pack, the Tinkars bugget, the Knaues truffe, and the Roges fardle: vnto all which, and other Autors of like reputation, but chiefly to the Hangmans apron, (that, that is the biggin of his wit), this worthy Autour is deeply beholding for great part of his fine conceits, and dainty learning; precious ware for Euphued creatures, and phantastical colts: whose wild and madbraine humour nothing fitteth

fo iust, as the stalest dudgen, or absurdest balduc-
 tum, that they, or their mates can inuent, in odd
 and awke speaches, disguisedly shapen after / the
 antick fashon, & monstrously shorne, like old
 Captaine Listers spānel. They that affect such
 ruffianish braueryes, and deuide their roister-
 doistering Iestes into Cuttes, slashes, and foines,
 may bestow the reading: for any other of what-
 soeuer qualitie, or calling, it will do them asmuch
 good, as dirt in their shooes, or draffe in their
 bellies: and in good sooth there is all the vse, Ciuill
 or Ecclesiasticall, that I can finde of this Babees
 papp: whom for his sweet interteinement with papp,
 figg, and nut, I officiously recomende to the Ship
 of Fooles, and the Galeasse of knaues. When he
 vseth himselfe with more modestie, and his friendes
 with more discretion, I may alter my stile: (let
 him change, and I am chaunged): or if already
 he be ashamed of that coniuring lease, foisted in
 like a Bumbarde, I haue sayd nothing. Till he
 disclaimeth his iniurie, in Print; or confesseth his
 ouersight, in writing; or signifieth his Penitence,
 in speach: the abused partie, that had reason to
 set-downe the Premisses without fauour, hath cause
 to iustifie his owne hand without feare; and is
 aswell in equitie to auowe Truth, as in charitie
 to disauowe Malice. At Trinitie hall: this fift of
 Nouember: 1589.



SO then of Pappadocio : whom neuer-
thelesse I esteeme a hundred times
learneder, and a thousand times honeste,
then this other Braggadocio ; that hath
more learning, then honestie, and more money
then learning, although he truly intitule himselfe,
Pierce Penniles, and be elsewhere stiled the
Gentle / man Raggamuffin. Nash, the Ape of
Greene, Greene the Ape of Euphues, Euphues,
the Ape of Enuie, the three famous mamnets of
the presse, and my three notorious feudists, drawe
all in a yoke : but some Schollars excell their
masters ; and some lustie blood will do more at a
deadly pull, then two, or three of his yokefellowes.
It must go hard, but he wil emprooue himselfe,
the incomparable darling of immortall Vanitie.
Howbeit his frendes could haue wished, he had
not shoven himselfe to the world, such a ridiculous
Suffenus, or *Shakerly* to himselfe, by aduauncing
the triumphall garland vpon his owne head, before
the least skermish for the victorie : which if he
euer obtaine by any valiancie, or brauure, (as he

weeneth himfelfe, the valiantest and braueſt Actour, that euer managed penne) I am his bondman in fetters, and reſuſe not the humbleſt vaſſalage to the ſole of his boote. Much may be done by cloſe confederacie, in all fortes of cooſenage, and legierdemane: *Monsieur Pontalais* in French, or *Meffeſer Vnico* in Italian, neuer deuifed ſuch a nipping Comedie, as might be made in Engliſh, of ſome leagers in the quaint practiques of the Croſbiting Art: but I haue ſeene many Bearwardes, and Butchers in my time; and haue heard of the one, what belongeth to Apes; and haue learned of the other, not to be affrayde of a dooſen horned beaſtes: albeit ſome one of them ſhould ſeeme as dreadfull, as the furious dun Cowe of Dunſmore heath, the terribleſt foman of Sir Guy. *Æſops* Oxe, though he be a ſuer ploughman, is but a ſlowe workeman: and *Greenes* Ape, though he be a nimble Iuggler, is no ſuer executioner. Yet well-worth the *Maſter-Ape*, and *Captaine mammet*, that had a hatchet, aſwell as *Papp*; a *Country cuffe* aſwell as a *figge*; a *crabtree cudgell*, aſwell as a *nutt*; ſomething of a *mans-face*, with more of an *Apes-face*. Had his pen bene muzzled at the firſt, as his mouth hath bene bunged ſince, theſe freſh *Euphuiſtes* would neuer haue aduentured vpon the whip, or the bobb: but Silence is a

flaue in a chaine; and Patience the common Pack-horfe of the world. Euen this brat of an Apefclogge, that can but mowgh with his mouth, gnafh with his teeth, quauer with his ten bones, and brandifh his goofe-quill; prefuming of my former fufferance, layeth about him with the faid quill, as if it were poffeffed with the fprite of *Orlando Furiofo*, or would teach the clubb of Gargantua to fpeake Englifh. For the flaile of *Aiax* diftrawght, or the clubb of Hercules enraged, were but hedge-ftakes of the old world; and vnworth the naming in an age of puiffance emprooued horriblie. The neweft Legendes of moft hideous exploits, may learne a new Art to kill-cow men with peremptorie termes, and buggeswordes of certaine death. Pore I muft needes be plagued; plagued? na, brayed & fquifed to nothing, that am matched with fuch a Gargatuiſt, as can deuoure me quicke in a fallat; and thundreth more direfull threatnings againſt me that onely touched him; then huge Polyphemus rored againſt Vlyffes, that blinded him: *Genus irritabile Vatum*. The generation of rauing Poets, is a fwarme of gad-bees; and the anger of a moodie rimeſter, the furie of a Waſpe. A mad Tiger, not like a mad Waſpe; and a chafed Wildbore, not comparable to a chafed gad-bee. Take heede of the man, whom Nature hath

marked with a gag-tooth ; Art furnished with a gag-tongue ; and Exercife armed with a gag-penne ; as cruell and murdrous weapons, as euer drewe bloud. The beft is, who hath time, hath life. He meaneth not to come vpon me with a cowardly stratageme of Scarborough / warning : he vfeth a certaine gallant Homericall Figure, called *Hysteron-proteron*, or the Cart before the horfe ; & with a refolution menaceth the effect, before the Caufes be begotten. When the iron Cart is made, and the fierie horfes foled, they fhall bring the mightie Battring-ram of termes, and the great Ordinance of miracles, to towne : afke not then, how he will plague me. In the meane feafon, it is a woonder to fee, how courageoufly he taketh-on with his hoftiffes needles, and his botchers bodkins. Indeede a good Souldiour will make a fhrewd fhift with any weapons : but it is a maruelous hart, that threatneth Ruine, ruine, ruine, with the dint of a bodkin, and the blade of an awle. Where fuch an other Rodomont, fo furious, fo valorous, fo redoubtable ? There is a peece of a good old Song, peradventure as auncient, as the noble Legende of Syr Beuis, or Sir Launcelot du Lake :

*Dubba-dubba-dubb, kill him with a clubb :
And he will not dye, kill him with a flye.*

He that made that Ryme in iest, little considered, what a gad-fly may doe in earnest. It is small wisedome, to contemne the smallest enemy; the gad-fly is a little creature; but some little creatures be flingers: neuer fauchon better managed, then some tiny penneknives: and what will he do, when he rusheth vpon me with the tempestuous Engins of his owne wit, that keepeth such a horrible coile with his Schoole-fellowes poinardo? An Ape is neuer to seeke of a good face, to set vpon the matter. Blessed Euphues, thou onely happy, that hast a traine of such good countenances, in thy flourishing greene-motley liuery: miserable I, the vnhappyest on earth, that am left desolate. Ah but that might be endured: euery mā is not borne, to be the leader of a bande: euery birde carrieth not Argus eyes displayed in her taile: Fame is not euery/boddies Sainct: to be forsaken, is no great matter; to be vtterly vndone, is miserable. That, and the Vnmercifullest persecution that may be inuented, is cruelly proclaimed against quiet him, that was once thronged and pestred with followers: but when he began to giue-ouer that greene haunt, and betooke himselfe to a riper Profession, Diomedes companions were changed into birdes. Times alter: and as Fortune hath more sectaries, then Virtue; so Pleasure hath more adherents,

then Proffit. I had no sooner shaken of my yoũg troupe, whō I could not associate as before, but they were festiually reinterteined by some nimble wightes, that could take the aduantage of opportunitie (with good viſages you may be fuer), and had purpoſely lyne in waite to climbe in Print, by the fall of their Seniors: like ambitious Planets, that enhaunſe their owne dignities, by the combuſtion, or retrogradation of their fellow-Planettes. Much good may that aduauncement doe them; and many daintie webbs may I ſee of thoſe fine Spiders: but although I dote vpon curious workemanship, yet I looue not artificiall poyſon; and am almoſt angrie with the trimmeſt Spinners, when they extort venom out of flowers, and will needes defile their friends Libraries with thoſe encroching cobwebbs. I wiſ it were purer Euphuiſme, to winne hoony out-of the thistle; to ſweeten Alōe with ſugar; to perfume the ſtinking Sagapenum with muſke; and to mitigate the heat of Euforbium with the iuice of the lilly. Tuſh, you are a filly humanitian of the old world: that was the ſimplicitie of the age, that loued frendſhip, more then gold, & eſteemed eury thing fine, that was neat, & holeſom: all was pure, that was ſeaſoned with a little ſalt; & all trimme, that was beſprinkled with a fewe flowers: now the

fiercest Gunpowder, and the rankest pike sawce, are / the braueſt figures of Rhetorique *in eſſe* ; and he the onely man at the Scriueners Piſtoll, that will *ſo inceſſantlie haunt the Ciuilian, and Deuine, that to auoide the hoat chafe of his fierie quill, they ſhalbe conſtrained to enſconſe themſelues in an old Vrinall caſe.* Giue me ſuch a *Bonifacius*. Now well-worth ſome termes of *Aqua fortis* at a pinch : and wellcome Vrinall caſe, a fit ſconſe for ſuch valiant termes ; and a meet Bulwarke againſt that fierie quill. I haue already felt his pulſe : and cannot well caſt his water, without an Vrinall either old, or new : but an old Vrinall will not ſo handſomly ſerue the turne : it would be as new, as the Capcaſe of Straunge Newes : but *a pure mirrour* of an impure ſtale ; *neither groſe,* the clearer to repreſent a groſe ſubſtãce ; *nor green,* the liuelyer to expreſſe ſome greene colours, & other wanton accidents ; *nor any way a harlot,* the trulyer to diſcoouer the ſtate of a harlatrie. I haue ſeene as hoat an Agent made a tame Patient ; and gladd to enſconſe the dregges of his ſhame in an old Vrinall. It is a blabb : but not euery mans blabb, that caſteth a ſheepes-eye out of a Calues-head ; but a blabb with iudge-ment ; but a blabb, that can make excrements bluſh, and teach Chawcer to retell a Canterbury Tale. But ſuch great Iudicials requier ſome little

studdie : and S. Fame is disposed to make it
 Hallyday. She hath already put-on her wispen
 garland ouer her powting Crof-cloth : and behold
 with what an Imperiall Maiestie she commeth
 riding in the ducking-chariot of her Triumphe.
 I was neuer so sicke of the milt, but I could
 laugh at him, that would seeme a merry man,
 & cannot for his life keepe-in the breath of a
 fumish foole. Phy, long Megg of Westminster
 would haue bene ashamed to disgrace her Sunday
 bonet with her Satterday witt. She knew some
 rules of Decorum : and although she were a lustie
 bounsing rampe, some / what like Gallemella, or
 maide Marian, yet was she not such a roinish
 rannell, or such a dissolute gillian-flurtes, as this
 wainfcot-faced Tomboy ; that will needes be
 Danters Maulkin, and the onely hagge of the
 Presse. I was not wont to endight in this stile :
 but for terming his fellow Greene, as he was
 notoriously knowen, the Scriuener of Crosbiters ;
 the founder of vgly othes, the greene master of
 the blacke art ; the mocker of the simple world,
et cætera : see, how the daggletaild rampalion
 bufleth for the frank-tenement of the dunghill.
 I confesse, I neuer knew my Inuectiue Principles,
 or confuting termes before : and perhaps some
 better Schollars are nigh-hand as farre to seeke
 in the kinde rudiments, and proper phrafes of

pure Natherie. *Why, thou errant Butter whore,* (quoth he, or rather she) *thou Cotqueane and scrattope of scolds, wilt thou neuer leaue afflicting a dead carcasse, continually read the Rethorique Lecture of Ramme ally? A wispe, a wispe, a wispe, ripp, ripp you kitchinstuffe wrangler.* Holla Sir, sweeter wordes would do no harme. Doubtlesse these emphaticall termes of the ally, were layd asteppe for some other acquaintāce, not for me: (good fellowes must be furnished with Oratorie, meete for their cōpany): but it is some mens euill lucke, to stūble in the way, when Will Summers weapon is ready drawen: and yet more possible for him to stay the swing of his eger hand, then for Maulkin to stay the dint of her moodie tongue; that can teach the Storme-winde to scould English; and pleadeth naturall possession of the Cuckingstoole. It is good pollicie, to yeeld to the furie of the tempest: (the resoluteest harts are fayne to yeeld to the imperious Iurisdiction of Stormes, and Shrewes): and the stamping feind, in the Hoat-houise of her foming Oratorie, will haue the last word. Sweet Gossip, disquiet not your louely selfe: / the dunghill, is your freehold; and the Cuckingstoole, your Copyhold: I know none so rank-minded, to enter vpon your proper possessions by riot: and in case thou wilt needes also, be the Schoolemistris of

Ramme-ally, certainly thou desirest but thy right ; that canst read a Rhetorique, or Logique Lecture to Hecuba in the Art of rauing, and instruct Tisiphone herselfe in her owne gnashing language. Other He- or She-drabs, of the curstest, or vengeablest rankes, are but dipped, or dyed in the Art : not such a Belldam in the whole kingdome of Frogges, as thy croking, and most clamorous Selse. Euen Martins Vnbrideled stile, and Paphatchets reastie eloquence, is but a curtaild iade to thy long taild Colt. Let the Clocke strike : I haue lost more howers ; and loose nothing, if I finde Equitie. Should the Butterwhore, besturre herselfe like an arrant Knight, and try all the conclusions of her cherne, she might peradventure in some fort pay thee home with Schoolebutter : but vndoubtedly she should haue much adoee, to stoppe thy Ouen-mouth with a lidde of Butter, thou hast swapped-downe a pounce of Butter at a peece of a Breakefast, or else there be lyes ; and art such a Witch for a cherne, or a cheesepresse, as is not to be founde in the Mallet of Witches, or in Monsieur Bodines Dæmonomania. Three meales of a Lazarello, make the fourth a Woolner : and it is a crauen frying-pan, that is affrayd of a Butter whore. No, no ; the butter whore is thy bondmaide in a bunch of keyes : and take heede fyrrha, the Cheeseknaue be not her

bondmã in a loade of logges. She commeth not
 of the bloud of the threateners : but kitchin-stuffe,
 and a Cole-rake haue in times past bene of some
 familiar acquaintance ; and it is a badd paier of
 Tonges, that cannot make as good sport at a pinch,
 as a paier of Bellowes. Though a dish / of buttered
 peafe, be no great Warriour, yet a messe of
 buttered artichokes, may perhaps hold you some
 prettie tacke. Onely I barre thoffame hoursonne
 vnlawfull termes, steeped in cisternes of Aqua
 fortis, and Gunpowder : and haue at you a gentle
 crash ; when it shall please the Vrinall, and the
 Dairy, to giue me leaue to play, with a butter-fly.
 I doe you the vttermoſt credit in the world, that
 am euer glad to seeke dilatorie excuses, and to
 craue a terme *ad deliberandum*. The fortune of
 the field, with pike, or penne, is like the lucke
 of Nauigation, or the hap of marriage : and I
 looue not greatly, to chopp vpon maine-chaunces.
 Nothing Venture, nothing loose ; none of the
 worſt rules, or cautels for their securitie, that can
 tell Storyes of hap-hazard ; and haue knowen
 some gallants more hardie, then wiſe. Humanitie
 is deſirous of Peace with the beſt, and of truce
 with the worſt : and truly I neuer longed to
 fight it out with flat ſtrokes, Vntil I muſt needleſly
 needes : but if there be no remedy by treatie, or
 amicable compoſition, although I was euer a

floweworme in the Morning, yet I cannot abide to go to bedd with a Dromedarie. I cannot maruell enough, how the nimble Bee should be ingendred of the sluggish Oxe, or the liuely waspe of the dead horse: but Nature is a miraculous, and omnipotent workeman; and I finde it true by Experience, that I must learne to imitate by Example, or preiudice miselfe by fauouring other. To preiudice, were a small matter, where the partie leuelleth at no great matter: but whē a mans credit is assaulted with bugges-words, and his witt beleaguered with the euer-playing shott of the Presse; Wisedome must pardon him, whom Follie assaileth; and Humanitie dispense with a necessary Apologie. I would I might make it a Pollicie, to make my aduerfarie much, and much, and much better / then he is: that I might re-encounter him with the more reputation, or the lesse disparagement: but it is his glory, to shame himselfe notorioufly, and he will needes proclaime his owne vanities in a thousand sentences, and whole Volumes of ribaldry; not to be read but vpon a muck-hill, or in the priuyest priuie of the Bordello. Let his Vices sleepe on a downe pillow; would, I could awaken his Vertues; and stopp their mouthes, that wish me in sober earnest, not to foile my hands vpon such a contemptible rascall;

but to let the reckles Villain play with his own shaddow : (Truth is my witnesse, diuers honest men of good reckoning, and sundry worshipfull Gentlemen, haue aduised me in those very termes expresly) : but sithence I cã doe him no good by perswasion, it were follie to suffer him to do me harme by detraction. You that are not ascertained of the lewd, and vile disposition of the man, imagin as fauorably of him, as Charitie can possibly conceiue of an impudent Railer, and a prophane mouth : but you, that can skill of learning, and looue Schollership, giue him his desert ; do Equitie right, and him no wrong, that wrongeth whom he listeth. They that haue leysure, to cast-away, (who hath not some idle howers to loose ?) may peruse his guegawes with indifferency : and finde no Art, but Euphuisme ; no witt, but Tarletonisme ; no honesty, but pure Scogginisme ; no Religion, but precise Marlowisme ; no consideration, but meere Nafhery : in briefe, no substance, but light feathers ; no accidents, but lighter colours ; no transcendants, but lightest phantasies that fly abouue the highest region of the cloudes, and purpose to haue a saying to the man in the Moone. His mountaines of Imagination, are too-apparent : his designements of Vanitie, too-visible : his plots of Ribaldry, too-palpable : his formes of libelling, too-outragious : S. Fame,



the goddesse of his deuotion: S. Blafe, the idoll of his Zeale: S. Awdry, the lady of his loue: and the young Vicar of old S. Fooles, his ghostly Father. I haue heard of many notable prowde fooles: read of many egregious aspiring fooles: seene many hautie vayneglorious fooles: woondred at manie busie tumultuous fooles: but neuer such a famous arrogant conceited foole, the very transcendent foole of the Ship; that hugely contemneth all the world, but his owne Flimflams; and against all Pollicie, maketh his aduersary more then an Affe, and lesse then nothing; whose victory otherwise mought peradventure haue seemed something. But to ouer-crow an Affe, is a fory Conquest; and a miserable Trophy for so douty a Squier. There were wayes enough of aunswearing, or confuting, with varietie, and reason; to his owne credite, the satisfaction of other, and my contentment: although hee had not desperately, and scurrilously broken-out into the fowlest and filthiest scurfe of odious termes, that Villany could inuent, or Impudency vtter. I wis hee mought haue spied a difference, betweene staring, and starke-blinde; betweene raging, and starke-madd; betweene confuting, and rancke rayling in the grossest sort. Had hee seasoned his stile with the least spice of discretion, or tempered his vnmeasurable licentiousnesse with any

moderation in the world; or hadd hee not most arrantly laboured, to shew himselfe the very brafen forehead of Impudency, and the iron mouth of Malediction, without all respect; he mought easily haue found me the calmest, and tractablest aduersary, that euer he prouoked; as reasonable for him, as for miselfe, in causes of Equity; and as partiall to foe, as to freend, in controuerfies of Trueth. But it is the topp-gallant of his braueft brauure, to be / a Creator of Asses, a Confuter of Asses, and a Conquerour of Asses: Asses are borne to beare; and Birdes to soare aloft. No winges, to the winges of Self-conceit; nor any failles, to the failles of wordes: but hagdard winges are sometimes clipped; and hoised sayles oftentymes humbled. Wordes amoût, like Castels of vapours, or pillars of smoke, that make a mighty showe in the Aier, and straight Vanish-away. Howbeit Enuie, is a foking Register: and Spite, a Remembrancer of trust. That would be written in a glasse of wine, is otherwhiles founde in tables of marble, and indentures of wainescot. The Oestridge can deuoure the rust of Iron; and the gall of present Obloquy may be brucked: but the note-booke of malice, is a monumēt of Tuckstone; and the memoriall of Feude, the clawe of an Adamant. Pride swelleth in the penne of arrogancy: Vanitie bubbleth in the mouth of folly:

Rancour boileth in the hart of Vengeance: mischief hammereth in the head of Villany: and no such Art memoratiue, as a Crabtree deske. But in contempt of Pride, I will speake one prowde word: Vaine Nash, whom all posterity shall call vaine Nash, were thou the wisest man in England, thou wouldest not; or were thou the valiantest man in England, thou durst not haue written, as thou hast desperately written, according to thy greene witt: but thou art the boldest bayard in Print; a hare-braind foole in thy head; a vile swad in thy hart; a fowle lyer in thy throate; and a vaine-glorious Assfe in thy pen: as I will prooue vpon the carkasse of thy wit, and courage, through-out all the Predicaments of prooffe. I hate malice in miselfe: but looue not to be an Vpholster of stuffed, and bombasted malice in other. And bicause thou termest me an old Fencer; (indeede I was once Tom Burleys Schollar); and needest displing, asmuch as any rake-hell / in England: Wherefoeuer I meete thee next, after my first knowledge of thy person, (not for mine owne reuēge, but for thy correction) I will make thee a simple foole, and a double swad, aswell with my hand, as with my tongue; & will engraue such an Epitaph, with such a Kyrieleson vpon thy scull, as shall make thee remembred, when Syr Gawins

scull shall be forgotten. Some bibber of Helicon, will deeme it worth eternall record. And if thou entreate me not the fayrer, (hope of amendment preuenteth many ruines), trust me, I will batter thy carrion to dirt, whence thou camst; and squise thy braine to fniuell, whereof it was curdled: na, before I leaue poudring thee, I will make sweare, thy father was a Rope maker; and proclaime thifelse, the basest drudge of the Presse; with such a straunge Confutation of thine owne straunge Newes, as shall bring Sir Vainglory on his knees, and make Master Impudency blush, like a Virgin. Thy witt already maketh buttons: but I must haue S. Fame disclaime her blacke *Sanctus*; and Nashes deuout Supplication to God, to forgiue Pierces reprobate Supplication to the Diuell. It must be roundly done: or I will with a charme for a full stomacke, make the gorge of thy belching Rhetorique, & the paũch of thy sur-fetting Poetry, sling figures vpward, and downward. Phy, what neede that be spoken? True: there is choice enough of sweeter flowers; & neat Oratory interteineth neatest Ciuilitie; (what relish so pleasant, as the breath of Suada; or what smell so aromaticall, as the voyce of the Muses?) but the mouth of a rude Affe, can tast no other lettice; and the spawne of a beastly dogfish, will vnderstand no other language but his owne. Fury

must be tamed with Fury, according to Homer, that teacheth the God of the field to strike home ; obstinacy awed with obstinacy ; force mastered with / force ; threatnings cooled with threatnings ; contempt answered in his owne tongue : and seeing the wild Colt is so vnreasonably lusty, I meane percase either to make his courage crowch forward, or his Art winch backward. I haue twentie and twentie charmes, for the breaking of stubborne iades, for the biting of mad dogges, for the stinging of Scorpiōs, for the darting of Vrchins, for the haunting of sprites, for the storming of tempestes, for the blasing of lightning, for the ratling of thunder, and so forth ; euen for the craking of an hundred Pap-hatchets, or a thousand Greenes, or ten thousand Nashes Peagooses. And in case all happen to faile, (for it must be a mighty Exorcisme, that can coniure-downe Spite) I haue a *Probatum est*, of a rare and powerable vertue, that will hold the nose of his, or his conceit to the grindstone ; and make gentle Villanie confesse, all the shredde, and ragges of his slashingest termes, are worne to the stumps. The desperate foole may clawbacke himselfe awhile : but it is possible, he may soone finde by founde Experience ; He brayeth open warre against him, that can bray the Assē-drumme in a mortar ; & stampe his Iewes-trumpe to Pinduff. Tom

Drumme, reconcile thifelfe with a Counter-fupplication : or fuerly, it is fatally done ; and thy S. Fame vtterly vndone world without end. As fauory a Sainct, by the verdict of that excellent Gentlewoman, as the cleanly difburfing of the dirtpurfe of Sir Gargantua, that made King Charlemaine, and his worthy Chiualry, laugh fo mightily, that their heads aked eight dayes after. A meet Idoll for fuch a Beadman. I haue digreffed from my purpofe, and wandred out-of my accustomed way : but when the buttermilke goeth on Pilgrimage, you muft giue the butterwhore leaue to play the arrant knight a crash, and to make it ganging weeke for once. / Ganging weeke? na, a ganging day, I trow, is a large allowance ; and enough to betire a poore ftragling wench for all her bragges. Neuer fory laffe fo pittifully aweary of her ragged petticote, and dagled taile ; the tattered liuery of the confuting Gentleman. Let it go ; and the wifpe go with it. I honour the meekeft Humility ; but fcorne the infolenteft Arrogancy vnder my foote ; and fay to the higheft Imagination of Vanity, Thou art a proude Fopp. When thou carriest thy witt loftieft, and prankeft-vpp thy felfe-looue in his gawdieft colours, thou art but an Affes head, and a Peacockes taile. Looue other ; and thou mayft be looued of other for pure Charity : hate

other, and thou art one of the most odious paddes in the world : a Turke, for M. Aschams Archers to shoote-at ; and a Iewes eye, for Christian needles. Now a little breathing pawfe will do no harme.

Were not Malice as wilfull in maintaining abuse, as rash in offering the same ; & Arrogancy as obstinate in the Conclusion, as violent in the Premisses : I readily could, & willingly would vndertake a more temperate, and pleasing course : but the fairest offer is fowly contemned ; the gentlest suite vnkindly repulsed ; say I, what I can, malice wilbe itselfe ; or do I, what I can, Arrogancy wilbe itselfe : and no other impresson can sinke into the hart of Spite, or the eare of Pride, but instigations of Spite, or suggestions of pride. Other motiues, are meere simplicities : and euery treaty of pacification, or parly of reconciliation, the shaking of an aspen leafe. The Diuels Oratour, is an Heralde of warre, not a Legate of Peace : and his Dammes Poet, the rankest challenger at short, or long, that euer sent defiance in white, or blacke. To refuse the tryall, would in the common opinion seeme a shame ; to accept the offer, in the best iudgements / is a shame : to take the foile, were a discredit ; to giue the foile, is no credit. A hard case, where Patience may be supposed simple, and auengement will be

reputed vnwile ; where I cannot hold my peace without warre vpon warre, nor speake without blame vpon blame ; where I must either be a passiue, or an actiue Assē in Print. I stand not vpon the point of honour, or vpon termes of reputation : but as it is a glory for the inferiour, to offer the combat, like the Châpion of prowes, or the Duellist of courage ; so I would the superiour might refuse that without preiudice, which he cannot vndertake without disparagement, or performe without obloquie. To spoile Pierce Penniles, were a poore booty : and to make Thomas Nash kisse the rod (by her fauour, that hath pleasurably made him a *Sultā Tomūboius*, & another *Almānus Hercules*, the great Captaine of the Boyes) were as fory a victory ; but only in her *Bello Euboico*, or in her main-battaile of Scouldes. Yet seeing he prouoketh me so malapertly hand to hand ; & seeing the infancy of his fancy will not otherwise be weaned from his cranke cōceit : better such a victory with some inconuenience, (for I hope, I may without arrogancy presume of the victory) then continuall disturbance with more and more mischief. Hector neuer raged amongst the Grecians, nor Achilles amongst the Troians ; as Meridarpax, the most furious, and thrife-redoubted Captaine of the mife, rushed vpon the wofull frogges, in that Heroicall battaile. But

Meridarpax himfelfe in his Impetuous, and mas-
 facrous fallyes, neuer made fuch a hauock of the
 miserable frogges: as this Swafh-pen would make
 of all English writers, howfoeuer garnifhed with
 eloquence, or ftoied with matter, might he be
 fuffred to hewe them downe, like stockes, or
 fhrubbes, without cōtrowlement. He will foone
 be ripe, that already giueth fo lufly / onsets; &
 threateneth fuch desperate maine carreers, as fur-
 paffe the fierceft Caualcads of *Bellerophon*, or *Don*
Alonso d' Aualos. Nothing curtaileth the courage
 of his brauery, or daunteth the swelling chiuallry
 in his noftrels, but that excellent learning is not
 efteemed, as it deferueth: nor fingular men
 aduanced, according to the merites of their
 worthineffe. Might Penniles, fingular Penniles,
 be the Preferrer of his owne Vertue, or Iudge of
 his owne caufe; (as he couragiously contendeth):
 I belecue, a Veluet coate were fcantly good enough
 for his wearing, that now remaineth moft humbly,
 and thirfe-affectionately bounden to the Right-
 honorable Printing-houfe, for his poore shifts of
 apparell, and his rich capp of maintenaunce. An
 Anatomie of the Minde, and Fortune, were re-
 fpectiueely as behoouefull and neceffary, as an
 Anatomie of the Body: but this Captain-Confuter,
 (like gallant Lobbellinus in a new liuery) neither
 knoweth himfelfe, nor other: yet prefumeth he

knoweth all things, with an ouerplus of fomwhat more, in knowing his Railing Grammar, his Rauing Poetry, his Roisting Rhetorique, and his Chopping Logique: with whose helpe, he hath thwitted the milpost of his huge, and omnipotent conceit, to a pudding-pricke of Straunge Newes. Straunge newes indeede, that Pierce Penileffe should create more Asses in an hower; then the braue king of Fraunce, (now the mightiest Warriour in Christendome, and a great aduauncer of valour,) hath dubbed Knightes in his raigne. *The Ironyes* of Socrates, Aristophanes, Epicharmus, Lucian, are *but Carterly derisions*: the Ironyes of Tully, Quintilian, Petrarch, Pontane, Sanazarius, King Alphonfus, but the sory *Iestes of the Counsell-table Asses*, *Richard Clarke*: the Ironyes of Erasmus in his prayse of Folly; of Agrippa in his dispraysse of Sciences; of Cardan / in his Apology of Nero, like Isocrates commendation of Bufiris, or Lucians defence of Phalaris the Tyrant, but *Good Beare bite not*: the Ironyes of Sir Thomas More in his Vtopia, Poemes, Letters, and other writings; or of any their Imitatours at occasion, but the *girdes of euery milke-maide*. They were filly country fellows that commended the Bald pate, the Feauer quartane; the fly, the flea, the gnat, the sparrow, the wren, the goose, the asse; flattery, hypocrisie, coofinage, bawdery, leachery, buggery, madnesse

itselfe. What Dunse, or Sorbonist cannot main-
 taine a Paradoxe? What Pefant cannot say to a
 glorious Soldiour? *Pulchrè me herculè dictum, &*
sapienter : or, *Lautè, lepidè, nihil supra* : or, *Regem*
elegantem narras : or, a man is a man, though he
 haue but a hose vpon his head : or so forth. *No*
such light payment Gabriell, at Pierce Penniles, or
 Thomas Nashes hand. They are rare, and dainty
 wittes, that can roundly call a man Assè at euey
 third word ; and make not nice, to befoole him in
 good fullen earnest, that can strangle the prowdest
 breath of their pennes, and meaneth to borrow
 a fight of their giddiest braines, for a perfect
 Anatomie of Vanitie, and Folly. Though strög
 drinke fumeth, & Aqua fortis fretteth ; yet I will
 not exchange my Milke-maides Irony, for his
 Draff-maides assery. It is not the first time, that
 I haue disputed *de Vmbra Asini* ; and prooued the
 Fox, the finder ; as wily a pigeon, as the cunning
 Goldsmith, that accused his neighbour, and con-
 demned himselfe. A melancholy boddy, is not
 the kindest nurse for a chearely minde : (the
 Iouiall complexion is souerainly beholding to
 Nature) : but I know not a finer transformation
 in Ouid, then the Metamorphosis of dudgen earnest
 into sport ; of harsh sower into sweet ; of losse into
 gaine ; of reproch into credit ; of whatsoeuer badd
 occurrence into some / good. I was neuer of

splenetique, when I was most dumpish, but I could smile at a frise iest, when the good man would be pleasurable; and laugh at fustian earnest, when the merry man would be furly. Straunge Newes wilbe as pleasant as a Cricket, by Cattes panges: and where such a Turlery-ginkes of conceit, or such a gibbihorse of pastime, as Straunge Newes? But fillip him, or twitch him neuer so little; and not such a powting waspe in Ramme-ally, or such a winching iade in Smithfield. Then, *Asse, and worse then a Cumane Asse, and foole, and dolt, and idiot, and Dunse, and Dorbell, and dodipoul, and Gibraltar, and Gamaliell Hobgoblin, and Gilgilis Hoberdehoy*; and all the rusty-dusty iestes in a country, are too-little for his great Confutation, that is lineally descended *ab Equis ad Asinos*; and taketh-on, like Hob-all-as, a stout king of the Saracens. When I am better grammered in the Accidents of his proper Idiotisme, and grown into some more acquaintance with his confuting Dictionary; I may peradventure conster, and pierce the whole Alphabet of his sweet Eloquēce a little better; and make some farther triall of M. Aschams double translation, a pretty exercise in a fit subiect. Meanewhile I am glad, to see him swimme vpp to the beardlesse chinne in a Sea of hoony, and ypocrase, that so lately was plunged in a Gulfe of other liquor, and parlously dashed

Ralt.
 w.

vpon the horrible Rocke of desperation. It is good, they say, to be merry, and wife.

Poggius was merry, and Panormitan wife : Marot was merry, and Bellay wife : Scoggin was merry, and the Lord Cromwell wife : Greene was merry, and Sir Cristopher Hatton wife : Nash is merry, and there be enough wife, though his mothers sonne be Pierce Penniles. Or if thou beist wife, or wouldest feeme no foole, beware of Casual / ties, & a new Attractiue. Thy toungue is a mighty Loadestone of Asses ; and must do asmuch for thine owne naturall eares, as the Magnes doth for Iron. As good do it at-firft, as at-laft : and better voluntary confession with fauour, then enforced profession with more shamefull penance. *Balaams Ass* was wife, that would not run vpon the Angels sword : *Aesops Ass* no foole, that was gladd to fawne vpon his master, like a Dogge : *Lucians Ass*, albeit he could not fly, like the witch his hostisse, (whose miracles he thought to imitate, had not her gentle maide coofened him with a wrong boxe) yet could he Politiquely faue himselfe, please, or ease his masters, delight his mistrisses, shewe many artificiall feates, amaze the beholders, drinke the purest wine in Theffalonica, and finally eate roses, aswell as thistles : *Apulius Ass* was a pregnant Lucianist, a cunning Ape, a loouing worme, and (what

written

Asses : d

v

faint
main

worthyer prayse?) A golden Affe: *Machiauels Affe* of the same mettall, and a deepe Politician like his founder, could prouide for One, better then the Sparrow, or the Lilly: *Agrippas Affe*, a woonderfull compoūd, and (may I say?) a diuine beaft, knew all things, like Salomon, and bore all burdens like Atlas. The great Library of king Ptolemy in Egipt, reported to haue bene replenished with feuenty thousand Volumes, not fuch a Library of bookes, or fuch, or fuch an Vniuerfitie of Arts, & Sciences, as *Agrippas Affe*. They that reuerence the wondrous Prophecies of the Cumane Sibyll, Amalthea, the chiefest of the ten inspired Sibylles; defende, or fauour the excellent qualities of the *Cumane Affe*; eſteemed by Varro, the moſt profitable ſeruānt of that Country, and by Columella the moſt neceſſary Inſtrument of all Countreyes. *Euery Affe* is naturally a well diſpoſed creature, and (as the learned Rabbines haue written) a mirrour of clemency, patience, abſtinence, / labour, conſtancy, and diuine wiſedome. No fuch Schoolemaſter for a wild boy, or a raſh foole, as the ſober, and ſtayed Affe; the Countryman of the wiſe Apollo, and the ſeuē wiſe maſters.

Venerat & ſenior pando Silenus aſello. Silenus the tender foſter-father, and ſage tutour of the wanton and frolicke Bacchus, afterward how braue, and frutefull? What an Orientall worthy? What

an Indian Conquerour? What a festiuall God? When Priapus, the shamelesse God of the garden, (so gentility called that leacherous Diuell) attempted to surprise Vesta sleeping; what an honorable peece of seruice performed *the honest Assse*, that with his lowde braying detected that villanous assault? What heathen memoriall more shamefull to that infamous God, thē *the solemne Sacrifice of that famous beast*, celebrated by the Lampfacens, in reuengement, and reproche of that treasonable enterprise? But what treason, like the treason of Politique Achitophell, and plaufible Absolon, that most disloyally, and desperatly rebelled against the sacred maiestie of the most valorous, and incomparable worthy king, Daud? And what reward, or aduancement meeter for such treason, then hanging? And who carried the wife Achitophel to hanging, but *his owne foolish Assse*? And who carried the desperate Absolon to hanging, but *his owne sober mule*? What should I surcharge your memory with more histories attonce? He that remembreth the gouernement of Balaams Assse, Æsops Assse, Lucians Assse, Apuleius Assse, Machiauels Assse, Agrippas Assse; the Cumane Assse, the Rabbines Assse, Apollos Assse, the seuen Sages Assse, Silenus Assse, Priapus Assse, Achitophels Assse, and Absolons mule; little needeth any other Tutour, or Counsellour. Some would presume to

alledge the fingular and peerlesse example / of the Christian Poet :

Ille viam ostendit, vili qua vetus asello

Rerum Opifex. Agrippa, Cardan, Trithemius, Erasmus, and diuers other notable Schollars, affecting to shew the variety of their reading, and the omnifufficiencie of their learning, haue bene boulder in quoting such reuerend examples, vpon as light, or lighter occasion; but humanitie must not be too-fawcie with diuinitie: & enough is better then a Feast. Sweet Apuleius, when thou hast wiped thy mouth with thine owne Affe-dung; and thine owne Tounge hath sayd vnto thy Pen, Pen thou art an Affe: then fellow-asses may shake handes, and they clapp their hands that haue heard the Comedie of *Adelphi*, or the two Asses: a more notable Pageant, then the Interlude of the two Sofias, or the two Amphitryos, or the two Mendechmi, or the two Martin Guerras; or any such famous Paire of the true person, and the counterfeit. ¶ But Asses carry mysteries: and what a riddle is this? that the true man should be the counterfeit; and the false fellow the true Affe. Or what a Secret in Philosophie shall I reueale, as vnto the sonnes of the Art: when I tell you, Asses milke is restoratiue, good for the gowte, for the blouddie fixe, for the clearenesse of the skinne: Asses bloud, good for the feauer lurdane: Asses flesh sodden,

pp. v. Galat.

200

good for the Leprosie : Affes liuer roasted, good for the falling sicknesse : Affes houes burned to ashes, good also for the same sicknesse, for the kinges euill, for woomen labouring with a dead burthen : Affes bones well-boiled, good against the empoisonment of the sea-hare : Affes stale, good for the raines of the backe, and a fine decoratiue to bewtifie the face by taking-of spottes, and blemishes : Affes dung, a sweet nossegay to staunch bloud, a souerain fumigation to expell a dead birth out / of the moothers woombe, and a faire emplaster for a fowle mouth, as it might be for the mouth of Bawdery in ryme, or of Blasphemie in prose. No Homericall Machaon, or Podalirius, comparable to the right Affe ; that teacheth the greatest Empiriques, Spagiriques, Cabalists, Alchimistes, Magicians, and occult Philosophers, to wrap vp their profoundest, and Vnreuealable mysteries in the thickest skinne, or rather in the closest intrals of an Affe. I would, some open-mouthed Libertines, and professed Atheists had as deeply learned that cunning lesson. Euen the dead carcasse of the Affe, ingendreth the flying Scarabe, or soaring Beetle, the noble and Vnreconcileable feudist of the Ægle : of whom my braue aduerfary, the famousst dor-beetle of this age, hath learned to contemne, and depraue the two mounting Ægles of the heauēly art of Poetry, Buchanan

Buchanan
Bawdery

in Latin Verſe, and Bartas in French meeter :
 Whoſe groſe imperfections he hath alſo vowed
 to publiſh, with an irrefragable Confutation of
 Beza, and our flouriſhingest New-writers, aſwell
 in diuinitie, as in humanitie ; onely diuine Are-
 tine excepted. But no thunderblaſing affright-
 eth, or toucheth the right Ægle : and the leaſt
 feather of the right Ægle, can ſoone deuoure
 the baſtard winges of other enuiouſ, and quarrel-
 ouſ birdes. What carrion Aſſe was the Sire
 of this vnapeaſble Scarabe : or what Scarabe
 ſhalbe the ſonne and heire of this carrion Aſſe ;
 I leaue it wholly to the diſcourſe of the learned
 Ægles, that were euer moleſted with the buzzing
 flye, and ſhall euer be haunted with the braying
 Beaſt. I muſt ſpin-vp my taſke. And bicauſe
 the wild-aſſe wanteth a picker-deuant, let him
 drinke his owne Vrine, tempered with Spicknard,
 as he carouſeth Helicon ; and according to the
 tradition of Vitalis de Furno, it will procure, and
 encreaſe haire ; as kindly, / as the Artificiall liniment
 of Doctour Leuinus Lemnius for a comely Beard.
 And in-caſe he feareth his fellow Greenes fluttish
 diſeaſe, let him read the naturall hiſtories of the
 Aſſe, and the Sheepe, in Ariſtotele, Pliny, or
 Geſner ; and he ſhall finde it one of their
 ſpeciall Priuiledges, to be arreſted from the arreſt
 of the fix footed Sergeant, a continuall haunter

beards
 alleg.

of other hairy beastes, and onely fauorable to the good Assē, and the gentle Sheepe. Or if haply he would be shod with a paire of euerlasting shooes, like the talaria of Mercury, (for alas that any Gentleman of worth, or correctour of the Lord du Bartas, should lye in the Counter in his bootes for want of shooes); Albertus, and Cardan will teach him to make incorruptible shooes of the durablest part of an asses hide, immortal leather. And ô sweet Muses of Parnassus, are not the sweetest pipes, and pleasantest instruments made of Asses bones? or do not the skillfull Geographers, Strabo, and Pliny, call dainty Arcadia in Peloponesus, (the natiue country of the great Apollo) *the Land of Asses*? Was not the renowned Pan, the Politique Captaine of the cōquerous Bacchus, & a supposed God in the Painim world, an Arcadian Assē? Was not Prince Arcas, the braue sonne of king Iupiter, after his death honored with the glorious memoriall of the *Great Beare* in heauen, an Arcadian Assē? Was not the *Little Beare*, his moother Calisto, an Arcadian Assē? Was not her father, the drad Tyrant, Lycaon, an Arcadian Fox, an Arcadian Woolfe, an Arcadian Assē? Was not the mighty Atlas, the father of Maia, and grandfather of Mercury, an Arcadian Assē? Was not Mercury himfelse, the most-nimble, and supereloquent God, an

Arcadian Affe? Was not Astrophill, excellent Astrophill, (an other Mercury at all dexterities, and how delicious a Planet of heauenly harmony,) / by his owne adoption, an Arcadian Affe? Histories are no snudges in matters of note: and affes had neuer lesse cause to be ashamed of affes. When wife Apollo, when Valorous Pan, when employable Mercury, when surmounting Atlas, when the *Great*, and *Little Beare* of heauen, when excellent Astrophil, glory in the honorable title of Arcadian Affes, who would not coouet to be recoonted in that memorable Catalogue? What generous, or noble Antiquitie, may wage comparifon with Statius Arcadians, *Astris, Lunaque priores*. Sweetnesse itselfe was the daughter and darling of Arcadia: and Arcadia the mother, the nurse, the dug, the sweet-hart of Sweetnesse itselfe. O the fugarcandy of the delicate bag pipe there: and ô the licorise of the diuine dulcimers there. No maruell though his Musique be sweeter, and sweeter, that is as fine an *Afinus ad lyram*, as the famous Disciple of the worthy Ammonius; and hath Greenes mellifluous Arcadia at his fingers endes, the very funerall of the Countesse of Pembrookes Arcadia. His other habiliments, and complements be innumerable: and I know not an Affe, but hath some good quality, that is, some speciall propertie of an Affe, either proffitable for commodity, or pleasurable

Arcane

Sect

Tul

for delight, as an Assē may be profitable, or pleasurable either simply, or in some respect. It was not for nothing, that the brauest king, that euer raigned vpon Earth, Alexander the Great, euen greater then any Mars, or Iupiter, that euer brandished scepter in the world; in his Royall and Valorous iudgment preferred the Assē before the man, when being solemnly commaunded by Oracle, to sley the first liuing Creature he should fortune to meete withall, if after his puissant, and conquerous manner he would that day obtaine the Victory; he happened to meete a good honest Coun/try-man, riding vpon an Assē; whose present sacrifice, as a most acceptable Oblation, made him Victorious. Lesse maruell of the Archbishops aunswere, in *mensa Philosophica*, and Pontans Dialogues, that hauing reuerently, and deuoutly Preached on Palme Sunday, of the She-Assē, whereupon Christ in humility voutsafed to ride; and after his lowly Sermon mounting vpon his lofty palfry, was riding his way; somewhat fatherly and gratiouly stayed awhile, to heare the old woomans suite, that came hastily running towards him, and boldly taking his horse by the bridle; now I beseech your Grace, quoth she, is this the She-Assē whereupon Christ in humility rode? No, moother, quoth he, but a poore fole of that rich Assē, and I a humble seruant of

that high Lord. Good enough, quoth the wooman, I knew not before that the gentle She-Affe your Grace Preached of, had such goodly foles: yes, mother, quoth the Bishop, and a great deale goodlier, then mine: and so departed, leauing behind him an euerlasting memory of that deuout Sermon, and that weighty Communication with the wooman, in honour of the Affe, a frute-full parent of many goodly and pompous foles. I will not trouble Boccace, or Poggius for Tales. He was a naturall foole, that would haue giuen his liuery againe vnto his Lord, bicause it was embrodered with Affes heades, which made a comely showe vpon his garment, and mought ful-well haue befeemed some richer coates. Could the mill, the plough, the packe, the hamper, the paniar, the cloakebagge, the burden, the fardell, the bagge and baggage, the cudgell, the goade, penury, famine, patience, labour itselfe speake; all other Apologies were superfluous: they would frame a substantiall and necessary defence of the Affe; and Experience would declame in commendation of his perpetuall Exercise, trauaile, industry, Valour, temperance, sufferance, magnanimity, and constancy, the honorablest and inuinciblest vertues in the world. The wisest Oeconomy maketh especiall account of three singular members; a marchants eare; a pigges mouth; and an Affes

backe. A short note, but worth all Tuffers, or Catos husbandry. Had I more experience in some cases, I could say more: & as my experience in those cases may happen to encrease, or amount, I will not faile to tender my deuoire. I haue penned large Discourses in prayse of studdy, meditation, conference, exercise, industry, vigilancy, & perseuerance, the worthiest thinges in the circuite of the Earth, (nothing vnder heauen, equialent to labour) : and whatfoeuer I haue addresssed in their behalfe, I may in fort alledge in honour of the Assē ; and compile whole Volumes in his commendation, more auailable for commodity, and more necessary for Vſe, then the workes of some great Commenters in humanity, Philosophy, history, and other higher Professions. He that can kindly play the right Assē, in ignorance wil finde knowledge, in pouerty wealth, in displeasure fauour, in ieoperdy security, in bondage freedome, in warre peace, in misery felicity. Who so thoroughly prouided for both fortunes, as he: or who so strongly armed against all casualties, as he? or what Seneca, Epictetus, Boetius, Petrarch, or Cardan, so effectually a Schoolemaster of *Sustine, et Abstine*, as he? or who such an Oeconomer to liue, as he: or who such a Philosopher to dye, as he? or what Physitian for the boddy, like him : or what Lawier for the substance, like him : or what Deuine for

H's
 name

viz

pt 12 then

p. 204

the minde, like him? or where such a Practitioner of Vertue as he: or where such a Fortune-wright, as he? or finally where such an apt subiect for the Ciuill, and morall reformation of the Prudent Augustus, the good Traian, the gentle Marcus Antoninus, the vertuous Alexãder Seuerus, the drad Septimius Seuerus, or any honorable Prince, or Politique Tyrant, that with a reuerēd authoritie, would establish Vertuous, and awfull orders of gouernement in his dominions?

But what an Affe am I, that procede so coldly, and dully in the Apology of so worthy a Creature? What will you say, Gentlemen, if I can prooue with pregnant arguments, artificially drawn from all the places of Inuention, according to Ramus, Rodolphes, or Aristotles Logique; that the fire-breathing Oxen, and mighty Dragon, which kept the most-famous Golden Fleece, the glorious prize of braue Iason, were Affes of Colchos: that the watchfull, and dreadfull Dragon, which kept the goodly Golden Apples, in the Occidental Ilands of the Ocean, called Hesperides, one of the renowned prizes of dowty Hercules, was a West-Indian Affe: that the golden-horned, and brasen-footed Menalian hart, the fierce Erymanthean Bore, the hideous birdes Stymphalides, the puissant Nemæan Lion, and the seuen-hedded Lernæan Hydra, which Hercules slew, were Affes of

Arcadia, and other adiacent countreyes of Morea: (for Mænalus, and Erymanthus, were hilles in Arcadia, Stymphalus a lake in Arcadia, Nemæa a wood in Argolis, and Lerna a fen in Argolis, an other shire of Morea :) that the Serpent with the golden creast, which kept the rich fountaine of Mars in Greece, and was slaine of valiant Cadmus, was an Assè of Boëtia, so called *à boue*, where the Prophet Amphiaraus breathed Oracles : that the huge Serpent Python *de monte*, ingendred shortly after Deucalions deluge, which the Arcadian god of Wisedome killed with his arrowes, the first founders of the / Pythian Games, was a mighty Assè of the mountaines : that the mounting Ægle, into which king Iupiter turned, not himselfe, but Ganymedes, (whom he tooke with him, as his flying Page, and vsed as his standing cupbearer) was a faithfull seruaunt, and a perpetuall Assè : that the hondred-eyed Argus, whom Queene Iuno appointed the keeper of Io, the fairest creature of the Arcadian herde, and whom Mercury lullabyed asleepe with a sweet Syrinx, or Arcadian Pipe, (many Strata-gemes, and mysteries in that Arcadian Pipe) was a blind Assè of Arcadia: I skip a thousand memorable Histories ; that all they, by what-foeuer noble, or glorious names intituled, that hauing charge of greatest importance, and inestimable Value, committed to their vigilant and

ielous custody, did attonce forgo their treafure,
 their honour, and their life (as many great
 perfonages for want of circumfpection haue done)
 were notorious Arch-afles. If I cannot fubftan-
 tially prooue all this, and for a neede euict by
 neceffary, and immediate demonftration, that the
 great world is a great Affe, afwell *actu*, as *Po-*
tentia; and the Microcofme, a little Affe, afwell
habitu, as *affectione*; fay I am a notable Affe,
 afwell *re*, as *nomine*. The Philofopher, that
 feeking-about with a candle at high noone, could
 not finde a Man in a populous market; without
 a candle would foone haue pointed at a faire
 of Affes; and could quickly haue difcouered a
 frutefull generation in euery element, in the water,
 on the Earth, about the fier, in the Aier. And
 the wife-man, that faid without exception, *Stul-*
torum plena sunt omnia; might eafely haue bene
 entreated, to haue fet it downe for a fouerain Maxim,
 or generall rule; *Afinorum plena sunt omnia*.
 The thundring Oratour Demofthenes, was not
 affraide to taunt Minerua, the armed Goddeffe
 of fine Athens, for exhibiting fauour to three/
 vnreasonable beaftes, the Owle, the Dragon, and
 the People: counting the People the moft
 importunate and intolerable beaft of the three,
 by whose appointment he was banifhed the dainty
 Citty, the onely feate of his raigning Eloquence.

all
 every where

m. b.

If the people of fine Athens, were such a barbarous and senselesse brute, as their excellentest Oratours, Philosophers, Captaines, Counsellours, and Magistrates founde to their cost : and if the people of braue Roome, the Lady, and Empresse of the world, were such a bellowing beast of many heads, as Horace called it, Tully proued it, Scipio fealt it, and Cæsar himselfe rued it ; what may be said of other people ? Flourishing Greece in many hundred yeares acknowledged but seuen wife-mē of speciall note ; as the auncient world acknowledged but seuen miracles, or magnificall spectacles worth the seeing : & Callimachus a sweet Poet, recording the memorable, and woonderfull things of Peloponesus, termed them Paradoxes. Vertuous Italy in a longer terme of dominion, with much adooe bred two Catos, and One Regulus : but how many Syluios, Porcios, Brutos, Bestias, Tauros, Vitellios, Capras, Capellas, Asinios, and so forth ? Other singularities, meete matter for Tullyes Paradoxes. The world was neuer giuen to singularities : and no such monster, as Excellency. He that speaketh, as other vse to speake, auoideth trouble : and he that doth, as most men doe, shalbe least woondred at. The Oxe, and the Assē, are good fellowes : the Libbard and the Foxe, quaint wifardes : whatfoeuer is abooue the common capacity, or vsuall hability

wee know

excellency
Paradoxes

Sunt
psych
 a Paradoxe. I will not bethinke miselfe of the rigorous sentences of Stoicall Philosophers, or the biting Apothegs of seditious Malcontents, or the angry sayings of froward Saturnistes, or the tumultuous Prouerbes of mutinous people: / (I haue small affection to the reasons, that are drawn from affection): but were not the world, an Vniuerfall Oxe, and man a generall Affe, how were it possible, that so many counterfait slightes, crafty conueiances, futtle Sophistications, wily coofenages, cunning impostures, and deepe hypocrisies should ouerflow all: so many opinions, Paradoxes, sectes, scismes, heresies, apostacies, idolatries, Atheismes should pester the Church: so many fraudes, shiftes, collusions, coouens, falsifications, subornations, treacheries, treasons, factions, commotions, rebellions should disturbe the Commonwealth? It is a world to consider, what a world of Follyes, and Villanies possesseth the world: onely because the world is a world, *id est*, an Affe. And would the Presse suffer this scribling Affe to dominere in Print, if it were not a Presse, *id est*, an Affe? Might it please his confuting Aship, by his fauorable permission to suffer One to rest quiet; he might with my good leaue be the graūd Generall of Affes, or raigne alone in his proper dominion, like the mighty Assyrian king, euē Phul Assar himselve, the famous son of the re-

would
 223

nowned Phul Bullochus. For so the Gentlewoman hath intituled him in a place, or two, that hath vowed the Canonizatiō of Nafhes S. Fame, in certaine Discourses of regard, already dispatched to my satisfactiō, & almost accōplished to her owne intention. It may peradventure be his fortune, to leaue as glorious a nephew behinde him, as euer was the redoubted Lob-assar-duck, an other noble king of Assyria; not forgotten by the said excellent Gentlewoman, but remembered with such a grace, as bewtifieth diuine wittes. Kind-hart hath already offered faier for it, & were it not that the great Phul Assur himselve had forestalled and engrosed all the commodities of Assyria, with the whole encomium of Asses / into one hand; it should haue gone very-hard, but this redoubted Lob-assar-duck would haue retailed, and regrated some precious part of the said commodities, and aduancements. He may haply in time by especiall fauour, and approoued desert, (what meanes of preferment, to especiall fauour, and approoued desert?) be interteined, as a chapman of choice, or employed as a factour of trust; and haue some stables of Asses at his appointment, as may seeme meetest for his carriages, and conueiances. For mine owne part, I must be contented to remaine at his deuotion, that hath the whole generation of Assyrians at

commaundement ; with a certaine personall priu-
 ledge, or rather an Imperiall Prerogatiue, to create
 and install Asses at pleasure. Had I not lately
 reuisited the Assyrian History, with the said
 vertuous Gentlewoman, one of the gallantest
 ornaments of her sexe ; I mought perchance haue
 omitted this small parcell of his great honour, and
 left the commendation of the Assē more vnperfect:
 which notwithstanding I must still leaue most-
 vnperfect, in respect of his vnspeakable beau-
 desert. Vnto whom for a farewell, I cā wish no
 more, then accomplished honour ; nor no lesse,
 then athleticall health. A short exhortation, will
 serue Socrates, to continue like himselfe. A roach
 not sounder then a haddocke, or the stockfish,
 that Pliny termeth *Afellus* : & nothing so vn-
 kindly hurteth an Assē, as the two melancholy
 beastes, cold, and the drowfie sicknesse ; the cause
 why Asses cānot abide to inhabite the most-cold,
 & frosen territories of Scythia ; but are glad to
 seeke their fortunes in other cōuntries, & to
 colonise in warmer feats. Blame him not, that
 sayth ; *The weather is cold, and I am wearie with
 confuting* : & in another place ; *Had I my health,
 now I had leysure to be merry : for I haue almost
 washt my hands of the Doctour*. Now I see thou
 art a good fellow by thine own cōfession, & wilt
 not giue the Asses head for the washing : Cold,

and the drowſie ſickneſſe, are thy two mortall enemies: when they are fled the Country, like fugitiue, and diſmall birdes, let vs haue a flitch of mirth, with a fiddle of the pureſt Aſſe-bone: onely I barre the Cheeke-bone, for feare of Sampſons tune, more then heroicall. But the ſpring-tooth in the lawe, will do vs no harme, although it were a fountaine of Muſcadell, or a conduict of Ypocraſe. Many are the miracles of right Vertue: and he entreth an infinite Labyrinth, that goeth about to praife Hercules, or the Aſſe: whoſe Labours exceede the Labours of Hercules, and whoſe glory ſurmoundeth the topp of Olympus. I were beſt to end, before I beginne; and to leaue the Autor of Aſſes, where I found the Aſſe of Autors. When I am better furniſhed with competent prouiſion, (what prouiſion ſufficient for ſo mighty a Prouince?) I may haply aſſay to fulfill the Prouerbe, by waſhing the Aſſes headd, and ſetting the crowne of higheſt praife vpon the crowne of young Apuleius, the heire apparant of the old Aſſe, the moſt glorious Olde Aſſe.

I haue written in all ſortes of humours priuatly I am perſwaded, more then any young man of my age in England. They be the wordes of his owne honorable mouth: and the golden Aſſe, in the ſuperabundãce of his rich humours, promiſeth

many other golden mountaines ; but hath neuer
 a scrat of filuer. Had Aristophanes Plutus bene
 outwardly as liberall, as Greenes Mercury was
 inwardly prodigall, he must needes haue bene the
 onely Orientall Starre of this Language : and all
 other writers, old, or new, in prose, or verse, in
 one humour or other, but sory Occidentall starres.
 Onely externall defects, quoth himselfe, are cast
 in his dish: for inter / nall graces, and excellentest
 perfectiones of an accomplished minde, who but
 he? Come diuine Poets, and sweet Oratours,
 the filuer streaming fountaines of flowingest witt,
 and shiningest Art : come Chawcer, and Spencer ;
 More, and Cheeke ; Afcham, and Astely ; Sidney,
 and Dier ; come the dearest sifter of the dearest
 brother, the sweetest daughter of the sweetest
 Muses, onely One excepted, the brightest Diamant
 of the richest Eloquence, onely One excepted, the
 resplendentest mirrour of Feminine valour, onely
 One excepted ; the Gentlewooman of Curtesie, the
 Lady of Vertue, the Countesse of Excellency, and
 the Madame of immortall Honour : come all the
 daintiest dainties of this toungue, and doe homage
 to your Verticall Starre ; that hath all the foueraine
 influences of the eloquent, and learned Constella-
 tions at a becke, and Paradiseth the Earth with
 the ambrosiall dewes of his incomprehensible witt.
 But what should I dally with hoony-bees ; or

Maiefty, haft thou *but one true Diana*? Is it not right-hand time, the young haddock were caught, that can already nibble fo prettily? Was he, thinke you, lodged in Cappadocia, for sleeping by the Sunne, and studying by the Moone? Whom, or what, will not he shortly confute with an ouerrunning furie, that fo brauely aduentureth vpon London, and the Court, all-attonce? Honour, regard thy good reputation; and staunch the ranke bloud of this arrant Autor; as honest a man, as some honest wooman I could name, that keepeth her honesty, as she doth her Friday fast. Suffer him to proceede, as he presumeth, & to end, as he beginneth; and looke for a rarer beaft in England, then a Woolfe; and a straunger monster in Print, then the diuine Ruffian, that intituled himselfe, *Flagellum Principum*, and prooued *Pestis Rerum publicarum*. My Tounge is an infant in his Idiotisme; and I had rather blesse my pestilentest enemy, then curse any: but some little plaine dealing dooith not otherwhiles amisse, where nothing but flat, and rancke groseness blotteth the paper, infecteth the aier, depraueth the good, encourageth the badd, corrupteth youth, accloieith age, and annoyeth the world. Good faith is my witnesse, I neither affect to obscure any light in an aduerfary; nor desier to quench any honest courage in an enemy; but wish euery

H
 the sat.
 in answer

sat
 dip est

gift of heauē, or/earth, of minde, or body, of nature, of fortune, redoubled in both, euen in the greenest aduersary, and wildest enemy : in whom I honour the highest, and looue the lowest degree of excellency : but am not easely coosend by Imperfection, branded with the counterfait marke of perfection. I am ouer-ready to pardon young ouersights, and forgiue inconsiderate offences : but cannot flatter Folly, or fawne vpon Vanity, or cocker Ignoraunce, or sooth-vp Vntruth, or applaude to Arrogancy, either in foe, or frēd. It cōcerneth euery man to looke into his owne estate with his owne eyes : but the young man, that will neither know himselfe, nor acknowledge other, must be told in brief, what the cōmon opinion reporteth at large. He hath little witt : lesse learning : lest iudgement : no discretion ; Vanity enough : stomacke at will : superabundance of selfe-conceit : outward liking to fewe, inward affection to none : (his defence of Greene, a more biting condemnation then my reproofe) : no reuerence to his patrons : no respect to his superiours : no regard to any, but in contemptuous, or cēforius sort : hatred, or disdaine to the rest : cōtinuall quarrels with one, or other : (not such an other mutterer, or murmurer, euē against his familiarest acquaintance) : an euer-grudging, & repining mind : a rauinous throte : a gluttonous mawe : a drōken

top - st

Sat
pers. 172

Sat
top - st

Sat

2

head: a blasphemous tongue: a fisking witt: a shittle nature: a reuolting, and rennegate disposition: a broking, and huckstering penne: store of rascall phraſes: ſome little of a brabbling Schollar: more of a rauing ſcould: moſt of a roisterly feruing-man: nothing of a Gentleman: leſſe then nothing of a fine, or cleanly Artiſt. And as for termes of honeſty, or ciuility, (without which the ſharpeſt Inuention is Vnſauery, and the daintieſt elocution lothſome): they are Gibridge vnto him; and / he a Jewiſh Rabbin, or a Latin Dunſe with him, that vſeth any ſuch forme of monſtrous termes. Aretine, and the Diuels Oratour, would be aſhamed to be conuicted, or endighted of the leaſt reſpectiue, or ceremonious phraſe, but in mockage, or cooſenage. They neither feare Goodman Sathan, nor maſter Beelzebub, nor Sir Reuerence, nor milord Gouvernement himſelfe: ô wretched Atheiſme, Hell but a ſcarecrow, and Heauen but a woonderclout in their doctrine: all vulgar, ſtale, and ſimple, that is not a note abooue Goddes-forbid. Whom durſt not he appeach, reuile, or blaſpheme, that forged the abominableſt booke in the world, *De tribus impoſtoribus mundi*: and whom will he forbear, in any reaſon, or conſcience, that hath often proteſted in his familiar hauntes, to confute the worthy Lord du Bartas, and all the famouſeſt moderne-writers, ſauing him

Aut

Archimedes

onely, who onely meriteth to be confuted with vnquenchable Volumes of Heauen- and Hell-fier. Perionius deciphreth the fowle preceptes, and reprobate examples of his Morall Philofophy, in an inuectiue Declamation, generally addreffed vnto all the Princes of Chriften dome, but eſpecially directed vnto the moſt-Chriſtian French king, Henry the Second. Agrippa deteſteth his monſtrous veneries, and execrable Sodomies. Cardan blaſoneth him the moſt-impudent Ribald, that euer tooke penne in hand. Manutius inueſteth him the Ring leader of the corrupteſt bawdes, and miſcreanteſt rakehells in Italy. His familiar acquaintance, Sanſouino, doth him neuer a whit more credit, then needeth. Taſſo diſdaineth his inſolent and inſupportable affectation of ſingularitie. Iouius in his Elogies voutſaueth him not the naming. Doubtleſſe he was indued with an exceeding-odd witt: and I neuer read a more ſurpaſſing-hyperbolicall / ſtile. Caſtilios Courtier after a pleaſurable ſort, graceth him with a deepe inſight in the higheſt Types and Idees of humane perfections, whereunto he moſt curiouſly, and inſatiably aſpired. His wanton diſciples, or Vain-conceited fauorites, (ſuch crowes, ſuch egges) in their fantaſticall Letters, and Bacchanall Sonnets, extoll him monſtrouſly, that is, abſurdly: as the onely Monarch of witt, that is, the Prodigall

fonne of conceit; and the mortall God of all Vertue, that is, the immortall Diuell of all Vice. Oh, what grandiloquous Epithits, and supereminent Titles of incredible and prodigious excellency, haue they bestowed vpon the Arch-miracle of the world, Signior Vnico? not so little as the huge Gargantua of prose, and more then the heauen-furmouting Babell of Ryme. But what ap-prooued man of learning, wisedome, or iudgement, euer deigned him any honour of importance, or commédation of note: but the young darling of S. Fame, Thomas Nash, aliàs Pierce Penniles, the second Leuiathan of Prose, and an other Behemoth of ryme? He it is, that is borne, to glorifie Aretine, to disgrace Bartas, and to vndooe me. Say I, write I, or dooe I, what I can, he will haunt, and trounce me perpetually, with spritish workes of Supererogation, incessant tormentours of the Ciuilian, and Deuine. Yet some-boddy was not wont to endight vpon aspen leaues of paper: and take heede Sirrha, of the Fatall Quill, that scorneth the sting of the busie Bee, or the scratch of the kittish shrew. A Bee? a drone, a dorre, a dor-bettle, a dormoufe. A shrewe? a drab, a hag, a fibber-gibbet, a make-bate, the pickthanke of Vanity, the pickpocket of foolery, the pick-purse of all the palteries, and knaueries in Print. She doth him no wrong, that doth him right, like

Nash

Soft
morning

Aſtræa, and hath ſtiled him with an / immortal
 penne ; the *Bawewawe* of Schollars, the *Tutt* of
 Gentlemen, the *Tee-heegh* of Gentlewomen, the
Phy of Citizēs, the *Blurt* of Courtiers, the *Poogh*
 of good Letters, the *Faph* of good manners, &
 the *whoop-hooe* of good boyes in Lōdon ſtreetes.
 Naſh, Naſh, Naſh, (quoth a louer of truth, and
 honeſty) vaine Naſh, railing Naſh, craking Naſh,
 bibbing Naſh, baggage Naſh, ſwaddiſh Naſh,
 rogiſh Naſh, Naſh the bellweather of the ſcribling
 flocke, the ſwiſh-ſwaſh of the preſſe, the bumm of
 Impudēcy, the ſhambles of beaſtlines, the poulkat
 of Pouls-churchyard, the ſhrichowle of London,
 the toade-ſtoole of the Realme, the ſcorning-
 ſtocke of the world, & the horrible Cōfuter of
 foure Letters. Such an Antagoniſt hath Fortune
 allotted me, to purge melācholy, and to thruſt me
 vpon the Stage : which I muſt now loade, like
 the old ſubiect of my new prayſe. There is no
 warring with Deſtiny : and the Lord of my ley-
 fure will haue it ſo. Much good may it do the
 puppy of S. Fame, ſo to confute, and ſo to be
 confuted. Where his intelligence faileth, (as God
 wotteth, it faileth often) he will be ſo bold, with-
 out more inquiry, to checke the common ſenſe of
 Reaſon, with the proper ſenſe of his Imagination,
 infinitely more high in conceit, then deepe in
 vnderſtanding : and where any phraſe, or word

207
 ſtyle
 capital letters

4 letters

P. 1
 109 4

prefumeth to approach within his swing, that was not before enrowled in the Common-places of his paper booke, it is presently meere Inkhornisme: albeit he might haue heard the same from a thousand mouthes of Iudgement, or read it in more then an hundred writings of estimation. Pythagoras Silence was wont to be a rule for Ignorance, or Immaturity: (no better bitt for vnlearned, or vnexpert youth, then Pythagoras Silence:) but Vnderstand, or not Vnderstand, both are one: if he vnderstand, it is Dunsery: if he vnder / stand not, it is either Cabalisme in matter, or Inkhornisme in forme: whether he be ripe, or vnripe, all is raw, or rotten, that pleafeth not his Imperiall taft. Had he euer studied any Pragmaticall Discourse; or perused any Treaties of Confederacy, of peace, of truce, of intercourse, of other forrein negotiations, (that is specially noted for one of my Inkhorne wordes); or researched any actes, and monuments, Ciuill, or Ecclesiasticall; or looked into any Lawes, Statutes, Iniunctions, Proclamations, (na, it is one of his witty flowtes, *He beginnes, like a Proclamation*: but few Treatises better penned, then some Proclamatīōs): or had he seene any autenticall instruments, Pragmatique articles, or other Politique Traicts: he would rather haue woondered I should Vse so fewe formall termes,

(which I purposely auoided, as not so vulgarly familiar) then haue maruelled at any, which I vsed. He is of no reading in comparison, that doth not acknowledge euery terme in those Letters to be autentick English; and allow a thousand other ordinary Pragmaticall termes, more straunge then the straungett in those Letters, yet current at occasion. The ignorant Idiot (for so I will prooue him in very truth) confuteth the artificiall wordes, which he neuer read: but the vayne fellow (for so he prooueth himselfe in word, and deede) in a phantastickall emulation presumeth to forge a mishapen rablement of absurde, and ridiculous wordes, the proper badges of his new-fangled figure, called Foolerisme: such as *Inkhornisme*, *Absonisme*, *the most copious Carminist*, *thy Carminicall art*, *a Prouiditore of young Schollars*, *a Corrigidore of incongruitie*, *a quest of Caualleros*, *Inamoratos on their workes*, *a Theologicall Gimpanado*, *a Dromidote Ergonist*, *sacrilegiously cõtaminated*, *decrepite capacitie*, *fiētionate person*, *humour vnconuersable*, *merriments vnexilable*, | *the horri-sonant pipe of inueterate antiquitie*; and a number of such Inkhornish phrases, as it were a pan of outlandish collops, the very bowels of his profoundest Schollerisme. For his Eloquence passeth my intelligence, that cleapeth himselfe a *Callimunco* for pleading his Companions cause

in his owne Apology: and me a *Pistlepragmos*, for defending my frendes in my Letters: and very artificially *interfuseth Finicallitie, sillogistrie, disputatiue right, hermaphrodite phrases, declamatorie stiles, censoriall moralizers, vlineall vsurpers of iudgement, infamizers of vice, new infringement to destitute the inditemēt, deriding dunstically, banging abominably, vnhandsoming of diuinityship, absurdifying of phrases, ratifying of truthable and Eligible English, a calme dilatement of forward harmefulnesse, and backward irefulnesse*, and how many fundry dishes of such dainty fritters? rare iunkets, and a delicate seruice for him, that cōpiled the most delitious Commentaries, *De optimitate triparum*. And what say you Boyes, the flatteringeest hope of your moothers, to a *Porch of Panim Pilsfryes, Pestred with Prayfes*? Dare the pertest, or deffest of you, hunt the letter, or hauke a metaphor, with such a Tite-tute-tate? He weeneth himselfe a speciall penman: as he were the headman of the Pāffletting crew, next, and immediately after Greene: and although he be a harsh Oratour with his toungue, (euen the filed Suada of Ilocrates, wanted the voyce of a Siren, or the found of an Eccho) yet would he feeme as fine a Secretary with his penne, as euer was Bembus in Latin, or Macchiauell in Italian, or Gueuara in Spanish, or Amiot in French: and

SAT

had
water

with a confidence preasseth into the rowte of that humorous rake, that affecteth the reputation of supreme Singularity. But he must craue a little more acquaintance at the hand of Art, and serue an apprenticeship of some nine, or ten yeares / in the shop of curious Imitation (for his wild Phantastie will not be allowed to maintaine comparison with curious Imitation) before he will be hable to performe the twentieth, or fortith part of that sufficiency, whereunto the cranknesse of his Imagination already aspireth; as more exquisite, then the Atticisme of Isocrates, or more puissant then the fury of Tasso. But how insolently soeuer grosse Ignorance presumeth of itselife, (none so hawty, as the basest Buffard): or how desperately soeuer foole-hardy Ambition aduanceth his owne colours, (none so foole-hardy, as the blindest Hobb): I haue seldome read a more garish, and pibald style, in any scribling Inkhornist; or tasted a more vnfauory flaumpaump of wordes, and sentences in any sluttish Pamfletter; that denounceth not defiance against the rules of Oratory, and the directions of the English Secretary. Which may here and there stumble vpon some tolerable sentence, neighbourly borrowed, or featly picked out-of some fresh Pamflet: but shall neuer finde three sentences together, worth any allowance: and as for a fine, or neat period, in the dainty and pithy



Veyne of Isocrates, or Xenophon, marry that were a periwig of a Siren, or a wing of the very bird of Arabia, an inestimable relique. Tush a point, neither curious Hermogenes, nor trim Isocrates, nor stately Demosthenes, are for his tooth: nor painting Tully, nor caruing Cæsar, nor purple-dying Liuy, for his humour. It is for Cheeke, or Afcham, to stand leuelling of Còlons, or squaring of Periods, by measure, and number: his penne is like a spigot; and the Wine-presse a dullard to his Inke-presse. There is a certaine liuely and frisking thing, of a queint, and capricious nature, as peerlesse as namelesse, and as admirable, as singular, that scorneth to be a booke-worme, or to imitate/ the excellentest artificiality of the most renowned worke-masters, that antiquity affourdeth. The witt of this, & that odd Modernist, is their owne: & no such minerall of richest Art, as prægnant Nature; the plentifullest woombe of rare Inuention, and exquisite Elocution. Whuist Art: and Nature aduance thy precious Selve in thy most gorgeous, and magnificent robes: and if thy new descant be so many notes above old Æla, Goodnow be no niggard of thy sweet accents, & heauenly harmony; but reach the antike muses their right Leripup. Desolate Eloquēce, and forlorne Poetry, thy most-humble suppliants in forma pauperum, cladd in mournfull and dreery weedes, as becom-

He praise
genuine
original
nature
out
N. G.
P. T.

meth their lamentable case, lye prostrate at thy dainty foote, and adore, the Idoll-excellency of thy monstrosus Singularity. O stately Homer, and lofty Pindarus, whose witt mounteth like Pegafus; whose verse streameth like Nilus; whose Inuention flameth like Ætna, whose Elocution rageth like Sirius; whose passion blustereth like Boreas, whose reason breatheth like Zephirus; whose nature fauoreth like Tempe, and whose Art perfumeth like Paradise: ô the mightiest Spirites of couragious Vigour, of whom the delicate Grecian, worthy Roman, and gallant Vulgar Muses learned their shrillest tunes, and hyperbolicall notes: ô the fiercest Trompets of heroicall Valour, that with the straunge Sympathy of your diuine Fury, and with thosfame piercing motions of heauenly inspiration, were woont to rauish the affections, and euen to mealt the bowels of brauest mindes: see, see what a wondrous quaime.

But peace milkemaide: you will still be shaming yourselfe, and your bringing-vpp. Hadst thou learned to discerne the fairest face of Eloquence, from the fowlest visage / of Barbarisme; or the goodlyest frame of Method from the ill-fauoredest shape of Confusion: as thou canst descry the finest flower from the coursest branne, or the sweetest creame frō the fowrest whey:

peradventure thou wouldest dote indeede vpon the bewtifull and dainty feature of that naturall stile, that appropriate stile, vpon which himselfe is so deeply inamored. I would it were out-of-peradventure: no man more greedy, to behold that miraculous Art of emprooued Nature. He may malapertly bragge in the vaine ostentation of his owne naturall conceit; and if it please him, make a Golden Calfe of his wooden stufte: but shewe me any halfe page without piperly phrasés, and tinkerly composition: and say I am the simplest Artift, that euer looked faire Rhetorique, or sweet Poetry in the face. It is the destiny of our lãguage to be pestred with a rablement of botchers in Print: but what a shamefull shame is it for him, that maketh an Idoll of his owne penne, and raiseth-vpp an huge expectation of paper-miracles, (as if Hermes Trismegift were newly risen from the dead, and personally mounted vpon DanTERS Presse, to emprooue himselfe as ranke a bungler in his mightiest worke of Supererogation, as the starkest Patch-pannell of them all, or the grossest hammer-drudge in a country. He disdaineth Thomas Delone, Philip Stubbs, Robert Armin, and the common Pamfletters of London, euẽ the painfulest Chroniclers tooe; bicause they stand in his way, hinder his scribling traffique, obscure his resplendishing

Makes
writing

Fame, or haue not Chronicled him in their Catalogues of the renowned moderne Autors, as he meritoriously meriteth, and may peraduenture be remembred hereafter. But may not Thomas Delone, Philip Stubs, Robert Armin, and the rest of those misused persons, more disdainfully disdain him; because he is so much vainer, so little learned, so nothing eleganter, then they; and they so much honest, so little obscurer, so nothing contemptibler, then he? Surely Thomas, it were policy, to boast lesse with Thomas Delone, or to atchieue more with Thomas More. If Vaunting, or craking may make thee singular, thy Art is incomparable, thy Wit superexcellent, thy Learning omnissufficient, thy memory infinite, thy dexterity incomprehensible, thy force horrible, thy other giftes more then admirable: but when thou hast gloried thy vttermost, and struggled with might, and maine, to seeme the Great Turke of Secretaries; if my eye sight be anything in the Art of endighting, (wherein it hath pleased fauour, to repute me something), vpon my credit for euer, thou hast nothing in thee of valour, but a railing Gall, and a swelling Bladder. For thy penne is as very a Gentleman Foist, as any pick-purse liuing: and, that which is most-miserable, not a more famous neckverse, then thy choice; to

fpeare, were the most of thy Power equiualent to the least of thy Spite. I say not; what aileth thy Gorgons head? or what is become of thy Sampsons lockes? (yet where miracles were promised, and atcheiuements of Supererogation threatened, they had reason, that dreaded vnknownen forces): but ô blastes of diuine Fury, where is your supernaturall prowesse? and ô horne of abundance, what meaneth this dearth of plenty, this penury of superfluitie, this infancie of eloquence, this simplicitie of cunning, this stupiditie of nimbleness, this obscuritie of brauerie, this nullity of omnifufficiencie? Was Pegasus euer a cowe in a cage, or Mercurie a mouse in a cheese, or Industrie a snail in a shell, or Dexterity a dogge in a dublet, or legierdemane a sloweworme, or Viuacity a lasie-bones, or Entelechy a slugplum? Can liuely, and winged spirites suppress the diuinitie of their ethereall, and Seraphicall nature? Can the thunder tongue-tye, or the lightning smoother, or the tempest calme, or loue quench, or Zeale luke-warme, or valour manicle, or excellencie mew-vpp, or perfection geld, or supererogatiō combe-cutt itselfe? Is it not impossible, for Humanity, to be a spittle-man, Rhetorique a dummerell, Poetry a tumbler, History a bankrowt, Philosophy a / broker, wit a cripple, courage a iade? How could the sweet Mermaids, or dainty Nymphes

Cat
 12.

10.
 12.

finde in their tender harts, to be so farre diuorced from their quaintest, and galiardest minion? Art, take heede of an aeger appetite, if a little greedie deuouring of singularitie will so soone gett the hicket, and make thee (as it were) belch the floouens Oratorie, and (as a man would say) parbreake the fluttres Poetry. Pure Singularity wrong not thy arch-excellent Selfe, but embrace him with both thy armes, that huggeth thee with his fine wittes; and cowl him with thy two corall bracelets, that buffeth thee with his two ruby lippes, and his three diamant powers, naturall, animall, and vitall. Precious Singularity how canst thou choose but dote vpon his alabaster necke, whose inuentiue part can be no lesse, then a sky-cooloured Sapphire, like the heauenly deuises of the delitious Poetesse Sappho, the god-moother of that azure gemme; whose Rhetoricall figures, fanguin and resplendishing Carbuncles, like the flamy Pyrops of the glistering Pallace of the Sun: whose alluring persuations, Amethists; whose cutting girds, adamants; whose conquering Ergos, loadstones; whose whole cōceit as greene, as the greeneest Iasper; whose Orient witt, the renowned achates of king Pyrrhus, that is, the tabernacle or chauncell of the Muses, Apollo sitting in the midst, and playing vpon his Iuory harpe most enchantingly. Is it possible, those powerfull

Art v
Singular

wordes of antiquity, whose mightie influence was wont to debase the miraculous operation of the most-vertuous stones, hearbes, and starres (Philosophy knoweth the incredible force of stones, hearbes, & starres) should be to seeke in a panting inspired brest, the closet of reuealed mysteries, and garden of infused graces? What lockes, or barres of Iron, can hold that quicksiluer Mercury, / whose nimble vigour disdaineth the prison, and will display itfelse in his likenes, maugre whatsoeuer empeachment of iron Vulcan, or wooden Dædalus? I hoped to finde, that I lusted to see, the very singular subiect of that inuincible & omnipotent Eloquence, that in the worthiest age of the world, intituled heroically, put the most-barbarous tyranny of men, and the most-sauage wildnesse of beastes, to silence; and arreared woonderful admiration in the hart-roote of obstinatest Rebellion, otherwise how vntractable? Had I not cause to platforme new Theorickes, and Ideas of monstrous excellency, when the parturient mountaine of miracles, was to be deliuered of his mighty burden of Supererogation? Who would not ride post, to behold the chariot of his Triumph, that glorieth, as if he had woon both the Indyes from the Spaniard; or Constantinople from the Turke; or Babylon from the Sophi? But holla braue Gentlemen, and alacke sweet Gentlewomen, that would so fayne behold

S. Fame in the pompe of her maieftie; neuer
 poore fuckling hope fo incredibly crofbitten with
 more then exceffiue defection. I looked, and
 looked for a fhining Sunne of Singularity, that
 fhould amaze the eyes, and aftonifh the harts of
 the beholders: but neuer poore fhimering Sunne
 of Singularity fo horribly eclipsed. I perceiue, one
 good honeft aker of performance, may be more
 worth, then a whole land of Promife. Take
 heede aspiring mindes, you that deeme yourfelues
 the Paragon wittes of the world; leffe your hilles
 of iollity be conuerted into dales of obfcurity; and
 the pōpe of your glory, become like this pompe of
 fhame. Euen when Enuy boyled his inke; Malice
 fctched his penne; Pride parched his paper; Fury
 inflamed his hart; S. Fame raged, like S. Georges
 Dragon: marke the Conclu / fion: the weather
 was cold; his ftile froft-bitten; and his witt
 nipped in the head. Take away the flaunting
 and huffing braueries of his railing tropes and
 craking figures: and you fee the whole galiarde
 of his Rhetorique, that flowteth the poore Philip-
 piques of Tully, and Demofthenes: and mocketh
 him, that chaunced to name them once in foure
 Letters; as he vfed their word Entelechy, now a
 vulgar French, and Englifh word, once in foure
 and twenty Sonnets. The wife Prieff could not
 tell, whither Epiphany were a man-faint, or a

264

 107. 12
 Entelechy

 the more
 here r
 in general

wooman-faint, or what the diuell it was. Such an Epiphany to this learned man is Entelechy; the onely quintessence of excellent, and diuine mindes, as is abooue mentioned; shewing whence they came by their heauēly and perpetuall motion. What other word could expresse that noble and vigorous motion, quicker then quickfiluer; and the liuely spring, or rather the Vestal fier of that euer-stirring Vertue of Cæsar, *Nescia stare loco*: a mystery, and a very Chimera to this swad of swaddes, that beginneth like a Bullbeare, goeth-on like a bullocke, endeth like a bullfinch, and hath neuer a sparkle of pure Entelechy. Gentlemen, now you know the good nature, and handsome Art of the man; if you happen vpon a feather, or some morfell for your likyng, (it is a very fory Booke, that yeeldeth nothing for your liking) thanke the true Autor, of whose prouision you haue tasted, and say not but Thomas Nash has read somthing, that affecting to seeme an Vniuersity of sciences, and a Royall Exchange of tounes, would be thought to haue deuoured Libraries, and to know all thinges, like Iarchas, and Syfarion, na, like Adam, and Salomon, the archpatrons of our new Omnisicians. If he did so in verity, it were the better for him, and not the worse for me: but you see his / doing, and my suffering. Neither I, nor my betters can please all: nor he, nor his

Smt
 Punyes will displease all: but as in the best something remaineth, that may be amended, without derogation to their credit; so in the worst there may appeare something, worth the allowance, with no great cōmendation to their person. Were I disposed to discourse, as somtime I haue bene forward vpon lesse occasiō, for the onely exercise of my stile, and some practise of my reading; I could with a facility declare at-large, that may briefly be touched. Amongst so many notable workes of diuine wittes, excepting the workes of Gods owne finger; there is not any so absolutely excellent, wherein some blemish of imperfection may not be noted: nor amongst so many contemptible Pamflets, any so simply base, but may yeeld some little frute of aduertisement, or some few blossoms of discourse. In the souerain workmanship of Nature herselfe, what garden of flowers without weedes? what orchard of trees without woormes? what field of Corne without cockle? what ponde of fishes without frogges? what sky of light without darknesse? what mirrour of knowledge without ignorance? what man of Earth without frailty? what commodity of the world without discommodity? Oh! what an honorable, and wonderfull Creature were Perfection, were there any such visible Creature vnder heauen? But pure Excellency dwelleth onely aboue; and

what mortall wifedome can accleere itfelfe from error? or what heroicall vertue can iustifie, I haue no vice? The most precious things vnder the Sunne, haue their defaultes: and the vilest thinges vpon Earth, want not their graces. Virgill could enrich himfelfe with the rubbish of Ennius: to how many rusty-dusty Waines was braue Liuy beholding? Tully, that was as fine/ as the Crusado, disdained not some furniture of his predeceffours, that were as course, as canuas: and he that will diligently seeke, may assuredly finde treasure in merle, corne in straw, gold in droffe, pearles in shell-fishes, precious stones in the dunghill of Esope, rich iewels of learning, and wifedome, in some poore boxes. He that remembreth Humfrey Cole, a Mathematicall Mechaniciã, Matthew Baker a ship-wright, Iohn Shute an Architect, Robert Norman a Nauigatour, William Bourne a Gunner, Iohn Hester a Chimist, or any like cunning, and subtile Empirique, (Cole, Baker, Shute, Norman, Bourne, Hester, will be remembered, when greater Clarkes shalbe forgotten) is a prouwd man, if he contemne expert artifans, or any sensible industrious Practitioner, howsoeuer Vnlectured in Schooles, or Vnlettered in bookes. Euen the Lord Vulcan himfelfe, the supposed God of the forge, and thunder-smith of the great king Iupiter, tooke the repulse at the handes of the

Lady Minerua, whom he would in ardent looue haue taken to wife. Yet what witt, or Pollicy honoreth not Vulcan? and what profoude Mathematician, like Digges, Hariot, or Dee, esteemeth not the pregnant Mechanician? Let euery man in his degree enioy his due: and let the braue enginer, fine Dædalist, skilfull Neptunist, maruelous Vulcanist, and euery Mercuriall occupacioner, that is, euery Master of his craft, and euery Doctour of his mystery, be respected according to the vttermoſt extent of his publike seruice, or priuate industry. I cannot stand to ſpecific particularities. Our late writers are, as they are: and albeit they will not ſuffer me to ballance them with the honorable Autors of the Romanes, Grecians, and Hebrues, yet I will craue no pardon of the higheſt, to do the ſimpleſt no wrong. In Grafton, Holinshed, / and Stowe; in Heywood, Tuffer, and Gowge; in Gaſcoigne, Churchyarde, and Floide; in Ritch, Whetſtone, and Munday; in Stanyhurſt, Fraunce, and Watſon; in Kiffin, Warner, and Daniell; in an hundred ſuch vulgar writers, many things are commendable, diuers things notable, ſome things excellent. Fraunce, Kiffin, Warner, and Daniell, of whom I haue elfewhere more eſpeciall occaſion to entreate, may haply finde a thankefull remembrance of their laudable trauailes. For a poliſhed, and garniſhed

Applied to
 current writers
 in his tales -

in his tales -

stile, fewe go-beyonde Cartwright, and the chiefeft
 of his Confuters, furnished writers : and how few
 may wage comparifon with Reinolds, Stubbes,
 Mulcafter, Norton, Lambert, and the Lord Henry
 Howarde? whoſe feuerall writings the filuer file
 of the workeman recommendeth to the plauſible
 interteinement of the daintieft Censure. Who
 can deny, but the Refolution, and Mary Magdalens
 funerall teares, are penned elegantly, and patheti-
 cally? Scottes difcoouery of Witchcraft, difmasketh
 fundry egregious impoftures, and in certaine
 principall Chapters, & ſpeciall paſſages, hitteth
 the nayle on the head with a witneſſe : howſoeuer
 I could haue wiſhed, he had either dealt ſomewhat
 more curteouſly with Monſieur Bodine, or cōfuted
 him ſomewhat more effectually. Let me not
 forget the Apology of fundry proceedings by
 Iuriſdiction Eccleſiaſtical, or, the Aunſwere to an
 Abſtract of certaine Actes of Parliament, Iniunc-
 tions, Canōs, conſtitutions, and ſynodals Prouinciall:
 vnleſſe I will ſkip two of the moſt-materiall, and
 moſt-formall Treatiſes, that any English Print
 hath lately yeilded. Might I reſpectiueſy pre-
 ſume to intimate my ſlender opinion, without
 flattery, or other vndecency: methought euer
 Doctour Whitgift (whom I name with honour)
 in his Sermons was / pithy : Doctour Hutton
 profound : Doctour Young piercing to the quicke:

Doctour Chaderton copious: M. Curtes elegant: M. Wickam sententious: M. Drant curious: M. Deering sweet: Doctour Still found: Doctour Vnderhill sharpe: Doctour Matthew fine: M. Lawherne gallāt: M. Dooue eloquent: M. Andrewes learned: M. Chaderton methodicall: M. Smith Patheticall: sundry other in their proper veyne notable, some exquisite, a few singular. Yet which of the best hath all perfectiones? (*nihil omni ex parte beatum*) or which of the meanest hath not some excellency? I cannot read-ouer all: I haue seldome heard some: (it was neuer my happ to heare Doctour Cooper, Doctour Humfry, or Doctour Fletcher, but in Latin): and I would be loth to iniury, or preiudice any, that deserueth well, *Via voce*, or by pen. I deeme him wise, that maketh choice of the best; auoideth the worst; reapeth fruite by both; despiseth nothing, that is not to be abhorred; accepteth of anything, that may be tollerated; interteineth euery thing with cōmendation, fauour, cōtentment, or amēdment. Lucians asse, Apuleius asse, Agrippas asse, Macchiauels asse, miselfe since I was dubbed an asse by the only Monarch of asses, haue found sauory herbes amongst nettles; roses amōgst prickles; berryes amongst bushes; marrow amōgst bones; graine amōgst stubble; a little corne amōgst a great deale of chaff. The *abiectest naturalls* haue

their specificall properties, and some wondrous vertues: and Philosophy will not flatter the *noblest*, or *worthiest naturals* in their venoms, or impurities. True Alchimy cã alledge much for her Extractions, and quintessences: & true Phisique more for her corrections, and purgations. In the best, I cannot commend the badd; and in the baddest, I reiect not the good: but precisely play the Alchimist, in seeking pure and sweet / balmes in the rankest poisons. A pithy, or filed sentence is to be embraced, whosoever is the Autor: and for the best benefit received, a good minde will render dutifull thanks, euen to his greatest enemy. ô Humanity, my Lullius, or ô Diuinitie, my Paracelsus, how should a man become that peece of Alchimy, that can turne the Rattes-bane of Villany into the Balme of honesty; or correct the Mandrake of scurrility with the myrrhe of curtesie, or the saffron of temperance. Conceiue a fountaine of contentation, as it were of Oyle, or a bath of delight, as it were of nectar; and preferre that saffron, or myrrhe, that odoriferous saffron, or aromaticall myrrhe, before this souerain Oyle; and that Balme, that diuine Balme, before this heauenly nectar. No naturall Restoratiue, like that saffron, or myrrhe, the very death of contention; nor any artificiall Cordiall, like that Balme, the very life of humanity, or should I

rather say? the very life of life. We haue many new Methodes, and platformes; and some no doubt as exquisite as scrupulous: but assuredly it were an excellent method, and singular platforme, to honour the wise, and moderate the foole: to make-much of the learned, and instruct the ignorant; to embrace the good, and reforme the badd; to wish harme to none, & do well to all; and finally (for that is the scope of this, and some other Discourses) to commend the Fox, and prayse the Ass. Martin himselfe is not altogether a waspe: nor Browne altogether a Canker-worme: nor Barrow altogether a Scorpion: nor haply Kett altogether a Cockatrice. Take heede of the snake in the grasse, or the padd in the straw; and feare no bugges. Be Martin a Martin Guerra; Browne a browne-bill; Barrow a wheelbarrow; Kett a kight; H. N. an O. K; if any found iudgements finde themselues beholding vnto them in/any point of aduisement, or consideration (singular men, and namely Scismatiques, and Heretiques were euer woont to haue some thing, or other, extraordinary, and remarkable) they may without my contradiction confesse their beholdingnesse, and for so much professe a recognisance of their dett. I thanke Nash for something: Greene for more: Pap-hatchet for much more: Perne for most of all. Of him I learned to know him, to know my

the same

257

tolerance to
N. B. L.

praise by friend

enemies, to know my frends, to know miselfe, to know the world, to know fortune, to know the mutability of times, and slipperinesse of occasions : an inestimable knowledge, and incomparably more worth, then Doctor Gregories *Ars mirabilis*, or Politians *Panepistemon*. He was an old soaker indeede : and had more witt in his hoary head, then six hundred of these flourishing greene heads, and lusty curled pates. He would either wisely hold his peace : or smoothly flatter me to my face : or fuerly pay-home with a witnesse : but commonly in a corner, or in a maze, where the Autour might be vncertaine, or his packing intricate, or his purpose some way excusable. No man could beare a heauy iniury more lightly : or forbear a learned aduersary more cunningly : or bourde a wilfull frend more dryly : or circumuent a daungerous foe more couertly : or countermine the deepest vnderminer more suttelly : or lullaby the circumspectest Argus more sweetly : or transforme himselfe into all shapes more deftly : or play any part more kindly. He had such a Patience, as might soften the hardest hart : such a sobermoode, as might ripen the greenest witt : such a flye dexterity, as might quicken the dullest spirite : such a scrupulous manner of proceeding in doubtfull cases, as might putt a deepe consideration into the shallowest phantasy : such a suspicious ielousy,

as / might smell-out the secretest complot, & defeat any practife : such an inextricable sophistry, as might teach an Agathocles to hypocrisē profoundly, or a Hieron to tyrannise learnedly. Whereas other carried their harts in their tongues, and their heades in their pennes ; he liked no such simplicity, but after a smugge, and fleering guise, carried his tongue in his hart, his penne in his head ; his dagger in his fleewe ; his loue in his boosome, his spite in his pocket : and whē their speech, writing, or cōutenance bewrayed their affectiō, (as the maner is), nothing but his fact discouered his drift ; & not the Beginning, but the End was the interpreter of his meaning. Some of vs, by way of experiment, assayed to feele his pulse, and to tickle his wily veynes in his owne veyne, with smoothing, and glosing as handsomly, as we could : but the bottome of his minde, was a Gulfe of the maine, & nothing could sound him deepely, but the issue. I wis elder men had bene too-young to manage such an enterprife with succeffe : and the finest intelligencer, or sagest Politician in a state, would vndoubtedly haue bene grauelled in the execution of that rash attempt. He could speake by contraries, as queintly as Socrates ; and do by contraries, as shrewdly as Tiberius : the master of Philip de Comines, Lewes the French king, one of the busiest, ielouifest, and craftiest Princes, that

euer raigned in that kingdome, might haue borrowed the Foxes Satchell of him : and peradventure not onely Æsops, or Archilochus Fox, but euen Lyfanders Fox, Aristomenes Fox, Pisistratus Fox, Vlyffes Fox, Chirons Fox, and Proteus owne Fox might learne of him, to play the Fox in the hole. For Stephen Gardiners Fox, or Macchiauels Fox, are too-young Cubbes, to compare with him; that would seeme any thing, rather then a Fox, and be a Fox / rather then any thing else. Legendaries may recorde woonderments : but examine the futtellest Counsels, or the wilyest practises of Gargantua himselfe, and euen Gargantua himselfe, albeit his gowne were furred with two thousand, & fise hundred Fox-skinnes, mought haue bene his Pupill. And I doubt not but he that worshipped *Solem in Leone*, after some few Lectures in his Astronomy, would haue honored *Solem in Vulpe*. He once kept a Cubbe for his pleasure in Peter-house in Cambridge (as some keepe birds, some squirrels, some puppyes, some apes, and so forth) and ministred notable matter to S. Maryes Pulpit, with Stories of the Cubb, and the Fox, whose Actes, and Monuments are notorious: but had the young-one bene as cunning an Artift for his part, as the Old-one was for his : I beleeeue, all the Colledges in both Vniuersities, or in the great Vniuersitie of Christendome, could not haue pat-

terned the young mā with such an other Batchelour
 of sophistry, or the old master with such an other
 Doctour of Hypocrisie. Men may discourse at
 pleasure, and feede themselues with Carpes, and
 Pikes: but I haue knowen few of so good a
 nature, so deuoid of obstinacy; so far alienated
 from contumacy; so contrary to frowardnesse, or
 testiuenesse; so tractable, so buxom, so flexible;
 so applicable to euery time, place, and person; so
 curious in obseruing the least circumstance of
 importance, or aduantage; so conformable to
 publique proceedings, and priuate occasions; so
 respectfull to euery one of quality; so curteous
 to men of woorship; so dutifull to men of honour;
 so ceremonious in tendering his deuotion to his
 good Lordes, or good Ladyes; so obedient to
 authority; so loyall to maiesty; so indifferent to
 all, and in all. He was gentle without familiarity,
 (for he doubted contempt): seuer / without rigour,
 (for he feared odioufnesse): pleasant without leuity,
 (for he regarded his estimation): graue without
 solēnity, (for he curred popular fauour): not rash,
 but quicke; not hafty, but speedy; not hoat, but
 warme; not eger in shew, but earnest in deede;
 no barker at any, but a biter of some; round,
 and sound. The Clergy neuer wanted excellent
 Fortune-wrightes: but what Byshop, or Politician
 in Englād, so great a Temporiser, as he, whom

euery alteration founde a new-man, euen as new as the new Moone? And as he long yawned to be an Archbishop, or Byshop, in the one, or other Church, (they wronged him, that termed the Image of both Churches, a neuter): so did he not arch-deferue, to be installed the puling Preacher of Humility, humility, humility; and the gaping Oratour of Obedience, obedience, obedience? Was not euer *Pax vobis*, one end of his gasping Sermon, & the very foote of his warbling Song? Be it percase a small matter to temporise in foure alterations of Kinges, and Queenes: but what an Ambidexterity, or rather Omnidexterity had the man, that at one, and the same meeting, had a pleasing Toungue for a Protestant, a flattering Eye for a Papist, and a familiar nodd for a good fellow? It was nothing with him to Temporise *in genere*, or *in specie*, according to Macchiauels grounde of fortunate successe in the world; that could so formally, & featly Personise *in indiuiduo*. He must know all the sinewes of commodity, and acquaint himselfe with all the ioints of aduantage, that will liue, and teach other to liue. *ô felix Cato, tu solus nosti Viuere*. Or if Cato were ouer-peremptory, and stoicall, to enioy that felicity, *ô felix Perne, tua solius Ars viuendi*. Doubtlesse it were better for the world, by infinite masses of millions, could the barbarous and Tragicall Tyrants,

Saturne, and Mars, / two diuellish Gods, moderate their fury, as he could do : or the hypocriticall, and Comicall Tyrants, Iupiter, and Mercury, two godly Diuels, temper their cunning, as he could do. It was in him, to giue instructions vnto Ouid, for the repenning of his Metamorphoses anew : and he better merited the name of Vertumnus, then Vertumnus himselfe. His designements were mysteries: his Councels, Oracles : his intentions like Minotaure in the Labyrinth: his actions like the Stratagemes of Fabius: his defiance like the wellcome of Circe : his menaces, like the songs of the Sirens: his curses, like the blessinges of those witches in Aphrica, that forspoke, what they prayfed, and destroyed, what they wished to be faued. I haue seene spannels, mungrels, libbards, antelops; scorpions, snakes, cockatrices, vipers, and many other Serpents in sugar-worke: but to this day neuer saw such a standing-dish of Sugar-worke, as that sweet-toungued Doctor; that spake pleasingly, whatsoever he thought; and was otherwhiles a fayre Prognostication of fowle weather. Such an autenticall Irony engrosed, as all Oratory cannot eftsoones counterpane. Smooth voyces do well in most societies; and go currently away in many recknings, when rowgh-hewne words do but lay blockes in their own way. He found it in a thousand experiences;

cf. Macbeth

1777

and was the precisest practitioner of that soft, and tame Rhetorique, that euer I knew in my dealings. And in case I should prefer any man of whatsoever quality before him, for a stayed gouernement of his affections, (which he alwayes ruled, as Homers Minerua brided Pegafus), or for an infinite and bottomlesse patience, sibb to the patience of Anaxarchus, or Iob, I should iniury him, and mine own cōscience, exceedingly. Were he handeled, as London kennels are vsed of fluttes, or the Thames / of floouens; he could pocket-it-vp, as handsomely, as they; and complaine in as fewe wordes, as any chanell, or riuier in England, when they are most contumeliously depraued. His other vertues, were colours in graine: his learning, lawne in starch: his wisdom, napry in suddes: his conscience, the weather in April, when he was young; the weather in Septēber, as he grew elder: the weather in February, toward his end; and not such a current Prognosticatiō for the fifty yeares, wherein he flourishd, as the Ephemerides of his Conscience. For his smug, and Canonick countenance, certainly he mought haue bene S. Boniface himselfe: for his fayre, and formall speech, S. Benedict, or S. Eulaly: for his merry cōceits, S. Hillary: for his good husbandry, (he was merry, and wife) S. Seruatius: for his inuincible

sufferance, S. Vincent the Martir : for his retracting, or recanting, S. Auguftine : for his not seeing all thinges, S. Bernard : for his preaching to geefe, S. Frauncis, or S. Fox : for his praying, a S. Pharife : for his fasting, a S. Publicane : for his chaffitie, a *Sol in virgine* : for his pastorall deuotion, a Shepherds Calendar : for his Fame, an Almanacke of Saincts. But if euer any were Patience incorporate, it was he : and if euer any were Hypocrify incarnate, it was he ; vnto whō I promised to dedicate an eternall memoriall of his immortall vertues, and haue payed some little part of my vowes. I twice, or thrife tryed him to his face, fomewhat sawcily, and smartly : but the Picture of Socrates, or the Image of S. Andrew, not so vnmoouable : and I still reuerence the honorable remembraunce of that graue, and most eloquent Silence, as the sagest lesson of my youth. Had Nashe a dramme of his witt, his Aunswere should haue bene Mum ; or his Confutation, the sting of the Scorpion. Other Straunge Newes, like /Pap-hatchets rapp with a Bable, are of the nature of that same snowt-horned Rhinoceros, that biteth himselfe by the nose ; and besturre them, like the dowty fencer of Barnewell, that played his taking-vp with a Recumbentibus, and his laying-downe with a broken pate in some three, or foure corners of his head. He must

Super
silence } set
attack }
or
other

revenge himfelfe with a learned Discourfe of deepeft Silence, or come better provided, then the edge of the rafour, that would be valued as wife, as that Apollo Doctour. Whofe Epitaph none can difplay accordingly, but fome Sprite of the Ayer, or the fier. For his Zeale to God, and the Church, was an aery Triplicity: and his deuotion to his Prince, and the State, a fiery Trigon. And fuerly he was well-aduifed, that comprized a large History in one Epithite, and honoured him with the title of *The Thrife-learned Deane*. Onely I muft needes graunt, one fuch fecret, and profound enemy, or fhall I fay? one fuch thrife-fecret, and thrife-profound enemy, was incomparably more pernicious, then a hundred Hatchets, or Country-cuffes; a thoufand Greenes, or Cunnycatchers; an army of Nafhes, or Pierces Penniles; a forreft of wilde beaftes; or what-foeuer Ilias of professed Euils. It is not the threatener, but the vnderminer, that worketh the mifchief: not the open affault, but the priuy furprize, that terrifieth the old fouldiour: not the furing flood, but the low water, that affrayeth the expert Pilot: not the high, but the hidden rocke, that endangereth the skilfull Mariner: not the bufie Pragmaticall, but the clofe Politician, that fupplanteth the puiffant ftate: not proclaimed warre, but pretended peace, that ftriketh the

prose
prouer

Sat:

in
st

Mar

deadly stroke. What Historian remembreth not the futtle Stratagemes of king Bacchus againſt the Indians: of king Midas againſt the Phrygians: of king Romulus againſt the / Sabines: of king Cyrus againſt the Lydians: of many other Politique Conquerours, againſt fundry mighty nations, Principalities, Segniories, Citties, Caſtels, Fortrefſes? Braue Valour may ſometime execute with fury: but Proweſſe is weake in compariſon of other practiſes: & no puiſſance to Pollicy; no rage to craft; no force to witt; no preſence to Religiō; (what ſpoiles vnder colour of Religiō?) no text to the gloſſe; what will not the gloſſe maintaine by hooke, or crooke? It was not Mercuries woodknife that could ſo eaſely haue diſpatched Argus, the Lieutenant of Queene Iuno, had not his inchaunting Pipe firſt lulled him aſleepe. And was not Vlyſſes in greater ieoperdy by the alluring Sirens, charming Muſicians, then by cruell Polyphemus, a boiſterous Giant? Vndoubtedly Cæſar was as ſingularly wiſe, as vnmatchably valiant; & rather a Fox, then a Lion: but in his wiſedome he was more affrayde of Sylla, thē of Marius; of Cato, then of Cata-line; of Caſſius, then of Antony; of Brutus, then of Pompey; to be ſhort; of Saturne, then of Mars; of Mercury, then of Iupiter himſelfe. It were a long diſcourſe, to ſuruey the wily traines,

and crafty fetches of the old, and new world : but whoſoeuer is acquainted with Stratagemes, auncient or moderne, knoweth what an hourde of Pollicies lurketh in the ſhrowde of Diſſimulation : & what wonders may be atchieued by vnexpected ſurprizes. The professed enemy rather encombreth himſelfe, & annoyeth his frendes, thē ouerthroweth his aduerſary, or oppreſſeth his foes. *Alexanders*, and *Cæſars* ſuddaine irruptions made them the Lordes of the world, and maſters of kinges : whiles greateſt threateners got nothing, but greateſt loſſe, and greater ſhame. What ſhould I ſpeake of the firſt founders of Monarchyes, *Ninus*, and *Cyrus* ? of the Venturous *Argo-pilots* ? of the worthy / *Heroes* ? of the dowieſt *Errant Knights* ? of the *braueſt men* in all ages ? whoſe mightieſt engin, (notwithſtanding whatſoeuer hyperbole of Valour, or fury) was *Scarborough warning* ; and whoſe Conqueſtes were aſſoone knowen-abroad, as their Inuaſions. No power, like the vnlikely aſſault : nor any miſchief ſo peremptory, as the vnlooked-for affliction. He that warneth me, armeth me ; and it is much, that a prepared minde, and boddy may endure ; but vnſuſpected accidents are hardly remedied : and in the fayreſt weather of ſecurity, to offer the foweſt play of hoſtility, is an incredible aduantage. So Cæſar Borgia, the ſouerein Type of

Macchiauels Prince, wan the Dukedome of Vrbin, in one day. So the Emperour Charles the Fiftes Army, passing thorough Roome, occurfiuely facked the Citty, and enriched themfelues exceedingly. So many inuincible states haue bene suddainly ruinated: and many puiffant perfonages eafely vanquished. Braue exploites, where the Caufer as honorable, as the Effect admirable. But honorable, or dishonorable, Pollicy was euer a priuy Counsell, whose Pofie, *Dolus, an Virtus*: Glory a rauifhing Oration: Ambition a Courfer: Looe a hoatfpurre: Anger a fierbrand: Hope a graine of mustard-seede: Courage an errant Knight: Couetice a marchant Vēturer: Fury a fierce executioner; whose word, the fword, and whose Law, *Non quā, sed quò*. As Monarchies, Principalities, and Conquestes; so Pety-gouernements, Segniories, Lieutenantships, Magiftracies, Masterships, Fellowships, haue their coolerable practises: and nothing is cunning, that is apparent. The Fox preacheth *Pax vobis*, to the Capons, and geefe: and neuer worse intended, then when the best pretended. Horaces, or rather Borgias.

Astuta ingenium Vulpes imitata Leonem; the deepest grounde / of highest pollicies, and the very Stratageme of Stratagemes. The glorious Indian Conquestes are famously knowen to the world: and what was the Valorous Duke of Parma in his

d. Henry

not typ
to read
Virtu

will
organ

braueſt Victories, but *Vulpes imitata Leonem*, and a new compoude of old Stratagemes? Iouius Fox in his militar, and amorous Emprefes, may call himſelfe a Fox : but ſome learned Clarkes, and iudicious Cenſours, profound Politiques, like Macchiauell, or Perne, (for Macchiauell neuer diſcourſed with his pen, as Perne deuifed with his minde) would go very-nigh to call him a gooſe, that gaue for his mott : *Simul aſtu, et dentibus vtor*. And his Griphen in ſome opinions, was neuer a-whit the more terrible, for that luſtie Poſie, a iolly heroicall verſe in a Grammar ſchoole :

Vnguibus, et roſtro, atque aliſ armatus in hoſtem.

I neuer read that Alexanders Bucephalus, or Cæſars couragious horſe, had any ſuch, or ſuch glorious Poſies : and I beleeuue Beuiſſes Arundell was no great braggard with motts. The Troian Horſe, or rather the Grecian Horſe, was not ſuch an Affe, to aduaunce himſelfe with any ſuch prowde Impreſe, as *Scandit fatalis machina muros* : but miniſtered ruthfull, and tragicall matter of that hawtie Poſie to the ſtately Poet. Did the flying Pegafus of the redoubted Bellerophon, before his aduenturous expedition againſt the hideous Lion-dragon Chimæra, that is, againſt the fierce ſauages, which inhabited that fier-vomiting mountaine in Lycia, proude to arme himſelfe with a braue

Posie ; or boast of his horrible mother Medusa, or of his owne Gorgonean winges ? Did the fiery horses of the Sunne, that is, of the hoattest East-countrys, threaten Prince Phaeton, or the world, with a dreadfull Verse ?

Tunc sciet ignipedum Vires expertus Equorum. May not peradventure the prowdest horse to be countermotted with a poore fragment of Statius ? *Seruiet asper Equus.* Or may not haply the dowieft Ass be emblemed with a good old deuise ? *in sulco tribulus sapit asper asello.* The rowghest nett is not the best catcher of birdes : nor the finest pollicy, a professed Termagãt. Although Lyfanders oxen said nothing, yet the Fox Lyfander could tell, which of them was a sluggarde, and which laborious. It is not the Verball mott, but the actuell Imprese, that argueth a generous, or noble minde. Children, and fooles vse to crake : Action, the onely Embleme of Iugurth, and the notablest fellowes ; whose manner is, *Plurimum facere ; minimum de se loqui* : the honorablest deuise, that worthy Valour can inuent. The Tree is knowen by the fruite ; and needeth no other Posie : the gallantest mott of a good Apple-tree, is a good apple ; of a good warden-tree, a good warden ; of a good limon-tree, a good limon ; of a good palme, a good date ; of a good Vine, a good grape ; and so fourth : their leaues, their

Action
words

Prognosticatiōs; their blossomes, their boasts; their braunches, and boughes, their brauery; their fruite, their armes, their emblemes, their nobility, their glory. I dare not say that Pittacus was as wise, as he, that beginneth like front-tufted Occasion, (for Occasion is balde behinde), and endeth like Ouids loouer, (for Ouids loouer must not attempt, but where he will conquer): few resoluter mottes, then *Aut nunc aut nunquam*: and what Valianter Posie, then *Aut nunquam tentes, aut perfice*: but Pittacus was one of the seuen famous Masters, and in his sage wisedome thought it a sober lesson, Foretel not, what thou intendest to atcheiue, lesse peradventure being frustrate, thou be laughed to scorne, and made a notable flowting-stocke. Perhaps he was an Ass; and speaketh like a Foole: (for / who is not an Ass, & a foole with this Thomas Wisedome?) but some plaine men are of his opinion, and will hardly beleue that the frākest braggards are the doubtiest doers. Were I a collectour of witty Apothegs, like Plutarch, or of pithy Gnomes, like Theognis, or of dainty Emblemes, like Alciat: suerly Pittacus should not be the last, or the least in that Rhapsody. Meane-while it is nothing out-of my way, to prayse the close, or suspitious Ass, that will not trouble any other with his priuy Counsell, but can be content to be his owne Secretary. There

300 the
Raphod.

be more quaint experiments in an Vniuersitie, then many a politique head would imagine. I could nominate the man, that could teach the Delphicall Oracle, and the Ægyptian crocodile to play their parts. His Ciuill toungue was a riddle; his Ecclesiasticall toungue a Hieroglyphique; his face a visard: his eyes cormorants: his eares martyrs: his witt a maze: his hart a iuggling sticke: his minde a mist: his reason a vayle: his affection a curbe: his conscience a maske: his Religion a triangle in Geometry: his Charity a Syllogisme in Celarent: his hospitality eleuen monethes in the yeare, as good, as good Friday: for one moneth or very neere, he was resident vpō his Deanry, & kept opē house in the Ile, like Ember weeke. Of an other mans, no man more liberall: of his owne, no man more frugall. He deeply considered (as he did all thinges) that good Oeconomy was good Pollicy: that Learning was to be commended, but Lucre, and Prefermēt to be studied: that he soweth in vaine, which moweth not his owne aduantage: that nothing was to be bestowed, without hope of vsance: that Loue, or Hatred auaille not, but where they may preuaile: that Affections were to be squared by occasion, and Reasones to be framed by proffit: that names of partialities, sectes, and diuisions, either in Ciuill, or Religious causes, were but foolish wordes, or

pelting termes; & all were to be estimated by their valuatiō in esse: that the true squire, & right Geometricall compasse of things, is habilitie, the onely thing, that by a soueraine prerogatiue deserueth to be called *Substance*: that according to Chawcers English, there can be little *adling*, without much *gabbing*, that is, small getting, without great lying, and cogging: that it was more wisdome to borrow thē to lend *gratis*; that the rauens croking loofeth him many a fatt pray: that the forstalling, & engrosing of priuy cōmodities, was a pretty supply of priuy Tithes: that many a little, by little & little maketh a mickle: that often returne of gaine amounteth: that the Fox neuer fareth better, then whē he is curfed most: that a siluer picklocke was good at a pinch; / and a golden hooke a cunning fisher of men; that euery man was neerest to himselfe, and the skinne neerer, then the shirt: that there were many principles, and preceptes in Art, but one principall maxime, or souerain cautell in practise. *Si non castè, tamen cautè*: that there was no security in the world, without Epicharmus incredulity, Dions Apistie, or Heywoods Fast binde, & fast finde: that Bayard in the stable, and *Legem pone*, were substantiall points of Law: that many thinges are hypothetically to be practised, which may not Categorically be reuealed: that two frendes,

or bretheren may keepe counsell, when one of the two is away: that *Vnum necessarium*: and so forth. For, *Vincit, qui patitur*, would go nigh-hand to open the whole packe, and tell wonderfull Tales out-off Schoole. Pap-hatchet talketh of publishing *a hundred merry Tales* of certaine poore Martinists: but I could here dismaske such a rich mummer, & record such a *hundred wise Tales* of memorable note, with such a smart Morall, as would vn-doubtedly make this Pamflet the vendiblest booke in London, and the Register one of the famousest Autors in England. But I am none of those, that vtter all their learning attonce: and the close man (that was no mans friend, but from the teeth outward, no mans foe, but from the hart inward) may percase haue some secret frendes, or respectiue acquaintance; that in regarde of his calling, or some priuate consideration, would be loth to haue his coate blased, or his fatchell ranfacked. Beside, what methodicall Artift, would allow the Encomium of the Fox, in the prayse of the Assē, vnlesse I would prooue by irrefragable demonstration, that the false Fox was a true Assē; as I once heard a learned Phisicion affirme, *if a goose were a Fox, he was a Fox.* Yet fuerly by his fauour who could sharply iudge, and durst freely / speake; He was a Fox, and a halfe, in his whole body, and in euery part of his soule: albeit I will not

deny, but he mought in some respectes be a Goose, and after a fort (as it were) an Assē: especially for defeating one without cause, and troubling the same without effect, that for ought he knew, might possibly haue it in him, to requite him aliue, and dead. Let the wronged party not be iniured: and I dare auowe, he neuer did, nor euer will iniury, or preiudice any, in deede, word, or intention: but if any whosoever will needes be offering abuse in fact, or snip-snapping in termes, sith other remedy shrinketh, he may peradventure not altogether passe vnaunswered. He thinketh not now on the booted foole, that alwaies ietteth in his startups, with his Stilliard hatt in his drouse eyes: but of an other good auncient Gentleman, that mought haue bene his father for age; his tutour for learning; his counsellour for wifedome; his creditour for siluer; his Catechist for Religion; and his Ghostly father for deuotion. He once in a scoldes pollicy, called me Foxe betweene iest, and earnest: (it was at the funerall of the honorable Sir Thomas Smith, where he preached, and where it pleased my Lady Smith, and the co-executours to bestow certaine rare manuscript bookes vpon me, which he desired): I aunswered him betweene earnest & iest, I might haply be a Cubb, as I might be vsed; but was ouer-young to be a Fox, especially in his presence. He smiled,

and replied after his manner with a Chameleons gape, and a very emphaticall nodd of the head. Whosoever, or whatsoever he was; certes my old backfrend of Peter-house, was the locke of cunning conueyance: but such a lock, as could not possibly be opened with any key, but the key of opportunity, and the hand of aduantage. If Opportunity were abroad, Iodocus / was not at home: where Occasion presented Aduantage, Pollicy wanted no dexterity; and the light-footed Fox was not so swift of foote, as nimble of witt, and quicke of hand. Some, that called him the lukewarme Doctour, and likened him to milke from the Cowe, founde him at such a fitt ouerwarme for their feruentest zeale: and I remember a time, when One of the hottestt furnace, shewing himselfe little better then a Cowe; He in a quauering voyce, and a lightning spirite, taught the wild roe his lesson. Haft was not so forward to runne to a commodity, but Speede was swifter to fly to an aduantage; and where Haft fomwhat grosely bewrayed his forwardnesse, Speede very finely marched in a cloude, and founde the goddesse Hypocrisite as sly a Conductriffe, as euer was fayre Venus to Æneas, or wife Minerua to Vlysses, in their queint passages. We may discourse of naturall Magique, and supernaturall Cabale, whereof the learnedest and crediblest

antiquity hath recorded wonderfull Histories : but it is the rod of Mercury, and the ring of Gyges, that worke miracles : and no Mathematician, Magitian, or Cabalist may counteruaile him, that in his heroicall expeditions can walke in a cloude, like a Vapour, or in his diuine practises go inuisible, like a Spirite. Braue Mindes, and Ventrous Harts, thanke him for this inualuable Note, that could teach you to atcheiue more with the little finger of Pollicy, then you can possibly compasse with the mighty arme of Prowesse. Or else in my curious obseruation of infinite Histories, Hypocrisie had neuer bene the great Tyrāt of the world, & the huge Antichrist of the Church. The weapon of the Fier, and Aier, is Lightning : the weapon of the Earth, & Water, Cunning. Was not he shrewdly encountred, that was prestigiouly besieged, and inuisibly / vnderminded with that that weapon of weapons? What other supply could haue seconded, or rescued him, but Death ; that had often bene the death of his Life in his worthiest Friendes, and was eftsoones the death of his Death in his wyliest enemy. Whose Spite was intricate, but detected : and whose Subtility maruelous, but disuailed : and he that disclosed the same, is perhaps to leaue an immortall Testimoniall of his Indian Discoouery. In the meane time, as the admirable Geometrician Archimedes would

haue the figure of a Cylinder, or roller engraued vpon his Toombe : so it were reason, the thrife-famous Deuine, should haue the three-sided figure, or equilater[al] Triagle, imprinted vpon his Sepulchre : with this, or some worthier Epitaph, deuifed according to the current Method of *Tria sequunter Tria*.

The Coffin speaketh.

{ *Aske not, what Newes? that come to visit wood :*
 { *My treasure is, Three Faces in one Hood :*
 { *A chaungling Triangle : a Turnecoate rood.*

{ *A lukewarme Trigon : a Three-edged toole :*
 { *A three-oard galley : a three-footed stoole :*
 { *A three-wing'd weathercock : a three-tongu'd schoole.*

{ *Three-hedded Cerberus, wo be vnto thee :*
 { *Here lyes the Onely Trey, and Rule of Three :*
 { *Of all Triplicities the A. B. C.*

Some-body oweth the three-shapen Geryon a greater duty, in recognifance of his often-promifed curtesies ; and will not be founde Vngratefull at occasion. He were very simple, that would feare a coniuring Hatchet, a rayling Greene, or a threatening Nash : but the old dreamer, like / the old dogge biteth fore, and no foe to the flattering Perne, or pleafing Titius : that haue fugar in their lippes, gall in their stomackes :

water in the one hand, fier in the other ; peace in their sayings, warre in their doings ; sweetnes in their exhortatiōs, bitterneffe in their canuaffes ; reuerēce in their titles, coouēn in ther actiōns : notable men in their kinde, but pitch-branded with notorious diffimulation ; large promifers, compendious performers ; shallow in charity, profounde in malice ; superficial in theory, deepe in practise ; masters of Sophistry, Doctors of Hypocrisie ; formall frends, deadly Enemies ; thrife-excellent Impostours. These, these were the Onely mē, that I euer dreaded : especially thatsame od mā *Triū Litterarū*, that for a linsy-woolfe wit, & a cheuerell consciēce was *A Per se A* : other braggardes or threatners whatsoeuer I feare, as I feare Hobgoblin, & the Bugges of the night. Whē I haue fought-vp my day-charmes, and night-spelles, I hope their power to hurt, shal be as ridiculously small, as their desire to affright, is outragiously great. I neuer stood stily in defēce of mine own hability, or sufficiency : they that impeach me of imperfection in learning, or practise, in discourfing, or endighting, in any art, or profession, cōfute me not, but confirme mine own cōfessiō. It is onely my honesty, & credit, that I endeuour to maintaine : other defectes I had rather supply by industry, thē cloake by excuse : & referre the decisiō of such points to the arbitre-

mēt of Indifferēcy : to which also I preferre the Prayfes of my dispraisers : & beseech Equity to rēder them their due, with a largesse of fauour. Iudgement is the wisest reader of Bookes : and no Art of distinctions, so infallible, as grounded Discretion : which will soone discern betweene White, and Blacke : and easely perceiue, what wanteth, what superaboundeth ; what becommeth, what / misbecommeth ; what in this, or that respect, deserueth commendation ; what may reasonably, or probably be excused ; what would be marked with an Asteriske, what noted with a blacke coale. As in mettals, so in stiles, he hath slender skill, that cannot descry copper from gold, tinne from siluer, iron from steele, the refuse from the rich veyne, the drosse from the pure substance. It is little of Value, either *for matter, or manner*, that can be performed in such perfunctory Pamflets, on either side : but how little soeuer it be, or may appeare, for mine owne part I refuse not to vnderly the Verdict of any curteous, or equall censure, that can discern betwixt chalke, and cheefe. *Touching the matter*, what wanteth, or might be expected here, shall be particularly, and largely recompensed, aswell in my Discourses, intituled *Nashes S. Fame*, which are already finished, and attend the Publication : as also in other Supplemētts thereof, especially those of the

aboue-mētioned Gentlewoman, whō after some aduifemēt it pleased, to make the Straunge Newes of the railing Villan, the cuffionet of her needles, and pinnes. Though my scriblings may fortune to continue awhile, and then haue their desert, according to the laudable custome ; (what should toyes, or dalliances liue in a world of businesse ?) yet I dare vndertake with warrant, whatsoeuer she writeth, must needs remaine an immortall worke ; and will leaue in the actiueſt world an eternall memory of the sillieſt vermin, that she shall voutſafe to grace with her bewtifull, and allectiue ſtile, as ingenious as elegant. *Touching the manner*, I take it a nice and friuolous curioſitie for my perſon, to beſtow any coſt vpon a triſle of no importance ; and am ſo ouerſhaddowed with the flouriſhing braunches of that heauenly plant that I may ſeeme to haue purpoſely preuented / all compariſon, in yeelding that homage to her diuine witt, which at my handes ſhe hath meritoriouſly deſerued. Albeit I proteſt, ſhe was neither bewitched with entreaty, nor iuggled with perſuaſion ; nor charmed with any corruption : but onely moued with the reaſon which the Equity of my cauſe, after ſome little cōmunication, in her Vnſpotted Conſcience ſuggeſted. They that long to aduaunce their owne ſhame (I alwayes except a Phenix, or two) may brauely enter the liſtes

of comparifon, & do her the higheft honour in defpite, that they could poffibly deuife in a feruiceable deuotiō. She hath in my knowledge read the notableft Hiftories of the moft-fingular woomen of all ages, in the Bible, in Homer, in Virgill, (her three fouerain Bookes, the diuine Archetypes of Hebrue, Greeke, and Roman Valour); in Plutarch, in Polyen, in Petrarch, in Agrippa, in Tyraquell, in whom not, that haue fpecially tendered their dilligent deuoir, to honour the excellentest woomen, that haue liued in the world: and commending the meanest, extolling the worthieft, imitating the rareft, and approouing all according to the proportion of their endowments, enuieth none, but Art in perfon, and Vertue incorporate, the two precioufeft creatures, that euer flourifhed vpon earth. Other woomen may yeelde to Penelope: Penelope to Sappho: Sappho to Arachne: Arachne to Minerua: Minerua to Iuno: Iuno to none of her fexe: She to all, that vfe her, and hers well; to none of any fexe, that mifufe her, or hers. She is neither the nobleft, nor the faireft, nor the fineft, nor the richeft Lady: but the gentleft, and wittieft, and braueft, and inuincibleft Gentlewoman, that I know. Not fuch a wench in Europe, to vnfwaddle a faire Baby, or to fwaddle a fowle puppy. Some of you may aime at her perfonage: and it

is / not the first time, that I haue termed her stile, the tinsell of the daintiest Muses, and sweetest Graces: but I dare not Particularise her Description according to my conceit of her beaufert, without her licence, or permission, that standeth vpon masculine, not feminine termes; and is respectiue to be dealt withall, in regarde of her courage, rather then her fortune. And what, if she can also publish more workes in a moneth thē Nash hath published in his whole life; or the pregnantest of our inspired Heliconists can equall? Could I dispose of her Recreations, and some others Exercises; I nothing doubt, but it were possible (notwithstanding the most-curious curiositie of this age) to breede a new admiration in the minde of Contempt, & to restore the excellentest bookes into their wōted estate, euen *in integrum*. Let me be notoriously condemned of Partiality, and simplicitie, if she fayle to accomplish more in gallant performance, (now she hath condescended to the spinning-vp of her silken taske) than I euer promised before, or may seeme to insinuate now. Yet she is a wooman; and for some passions may challenge the generall Priuiledge of her sexe, and a speciall dispensation in the cause of an affectionate friend, deuoted to the seruice of her excellent desert; whom she hath founde no lesse, then the Handmayd of Art, the mistres of

Witt, the Gentlewoman of right Gentleneffe, and the Lady of right Vertue. Howbeit euen those passions she hath so ordered, and managed, with such a witty temper of violent, but aduised motions, full of spirite, and bloud, but as full of sence, and iudgement, that they may rather seeme the marrow of reason, than the froath of affection : and her hoattest fury may fitly be resembled to the passing of a braue career by a Pegafus, ruled with the reanes of a Mineruas bridle. Her Pen is / a very Pegafus indeede, and runneth like a winged horfe, gouerned with the hand of exquisite skill. She it is, that must returne the mighty famous worke of Supererogation with Benet, and Collect. I haue touched the booted Shakerley a little, that is alwayes riding, and neuer rideth ; alwayes confuting, and neuer confuteth ; alwayes ailing something, and railing anything : that shamefully, and odiously misuseth euery frend, or acquaintance, as he hath serued some of his fauorablest Patrons, (whom for certain respectes I am not to name), M. Apis Lapis, Greene, Marlow, Chettle, and whom not? that saluteth me with a *Gabrielissime Gabriel*, which can giue him the farewell with a Thomassissime Thomas, or an Assissime Assie ; yet haue not called him a filthy companion, or a scuruy fellow, as all the world, that knoweth him, calleth him : that in his Pierce Penniles, and

Straunge Newes, the Bull-beggers of his courage, hath omitted no word, or phrase of his railing Dictionary, but onely *Tu es Starnigogolus*: and hath Valiantly vowed to haue *The Last Word*, to dye for't.

*Plaudite Victori, Iuuenes hic quotquot adestis:
Nam me qui vicit, doctior est Nebulo.*

The best is, where my Aunswere is, or may be deemed Vnsufficient, (as it is commonly ouer-tame for so wild a Bullocke), there She with as Visible an Analysis, as any Anatome, strippeth his Art into his doublet; his witt into his shirt; his whole matter, & manner into their first Principles; his matter *in Materiã Primam*; his manner *in formam primam*; and both in *Priuationem Vltimam*, id est, *his Last Word*, so gloriously threatened. I desire no other fauour at the handes of Curtesie, but that Art, and Witt may be her readers; & Equitie my iudge: to whose Vnpartiall Integrity I humbly appeale in the Premisses: with dutiful recom-/mendatiõ of Nashes S. Fame, euẽ to S. Fame herselfe: who with her owne flourishng handes is shortly to erect a May pole in honour of his Victorious *Last Word*. Doubt ye not, gallãt Gentlemẽ, he shall finde the guerdon of his Valour, & the meede of his meritorious worke. Though my Pen be a slugplum, looke for a quill, as

quicke, as quickfiluer, & pittie the foary fwaine, that hath incurred the indignatiō of fuch a quill; and may euerlastingly be a miserable Spectacle for all libelling rakehelles, that otherwise might desperately presume to venture the foyle of their cranke folly. The stay of the Publicatiō, resteth onely at my instance: who can cōceiue small hope of any possible account, or regard of mine owne discourfes, were that faire body of the sweetest Venus in Print, as it is redoubtably armed with the compleat harnesse of the brauest Minerua. When his necessary defence hath sufficiently accleered him, whom it principally concerneth to acquitt himselfe: She shall no sooner appeare in person, like a new Starre in Cassiopea, but every eye of capacity will see a conspicuous difference betweene her, and other myrroures of Eloquence: and the wofull slaue of S. Fame must either blindfolde himselfe with insensible peruersitie, or behold his owne notorious folly, with most-shamefull shame. It will then appeare, as it were in a cleere Vrinall, whose witt hath the *greene-sicknesse*: and I would deeme it a greater maruell, then the mightiest wōder, that happened in the famous year, 88. if his cause should not haue the *falling-sicknesse*, that is encoūtered with an arme of such force. M. Stowe, let it be enchronicled for one of the singularities, or miracles of this age, that a

thing lighter then Tarletons Toy, and vayner then Shakerleyes conceit, that is, Nafh, should be the subiect of so inualuable a worke: and be it knowen to Impudency / by these Presentes, that his brafen wall is battred to Pin dust, and his Iron gate shaken all to nothing. It is in the least of her energetically lines to do it: more easely, thē a fine thread cracketh a iāgling Bell. A pretty experiment: & not vnlike some of her straunge inuentions, and rare deuises, as forcible to moue, as feat to delight. The issue will resolue the doubtfullest minde: and I am content to referre Incredulity, to the visible, and palpable euidence of the Terme Probatory. When either the Light of Nature, and the Sunne of Art must be in Eclipse: or the shining rayes of her singular giftes will display themselues in their accustomed brightnesse; and discoouer the base obscurity of that mischieuous Planet, that in a vile ambition seeketh the exaltation of his fame, by the depression of their credit, that are hable to extinguish the proudest glimze of his Lampe. Her rare perfections can liuelyest blason themselues: and this penne is a very vn sufficient Oratour to expresse the heauenly bewties of her minde: but I neuer knew Vertue, a more inuiolable Virgine, then in her excellent selfe: and the day is yet to come, wherein I euer founde her Witt a defectiue,

or Ecliptique creature. She knoweth, I flatter not her Fortune: and if I honour her Vertue, whose confirmed modestie I could neuer see disguised with any glose of commendation; who can blame me for discharging some little part of a great dutie? She hath in meere gratuity bestowed a largesse vpon her affectionate seruauant; that imputeth the same, as an excessiue fauour, to her hyperbolicall curtesie, not to any merite in himselfe: but the lesse my desert, the greater her liberality; whom I cannot any way reacquite, farther then the zeale of a most-deuoted minde may extende; as incessantly thankfull, as infinitely debtfull. For to adresse a plausible / discourse, or to garnish a Panegyricall Oration in her prayse, as occasion may present; will appeare to be a taske of Ciuill Iustice, not any peece of Ciuill curtesie, when her owne siluer Tractes shall publish the precious valour of her golden Vertues, and decipher the inestimable worth of the Autor by her diuine handyworke. At the first vewe whereof, as at the piercing sight of the amiablest Bewtie, who can tell how suddaine Passions may worke? or what a sting, some tickling Interiection may leaue in the hart, and liuer of affection? I am euer prone to hope, as I wish, euen the best of the worst: and although wilfull Malice be a stiffe, and stubberne aduersary to appease, yet I haue seene a greater



miracle, then the pacification of Paper-warres, or the attonement of Inkhorne foes. There she standeth, that with the finger of Industry, and the toungue of Affability, hath acheiued some straunger woonders, vpon as rough, and harsh fellowes, as

*The noddy Nash, whom euery seruing Swash
With pot-iestes dash, and euery whip-dog lash :*

(for the ryme is more famous, then was intended): and with the same causes emprooued, why may She not directly, or violently accomplish the same effectes? or what is impossible to the persuasue, and Patheticall influence of Reason, and Affection? It is a very dismall, and caitiue Planet, that can finde in his hart to encounter those two gracious Starres, with malicious aspectes : which he must despitefully encounter, that will obstinately oppose his peeuish rancour to her sweete Ciuility. In case nothing else will preuayle with insatiable Enuy, and vnquenchable Malice, (for so I am eftsoones informed, whatsoeuer course be taken for the mitigation of his rage) : yet I am vehemently perswaded in Physique, and resolued in Pollicy, that the Oile of Scor/pions will finally heale the woondes of Scorpions. I know One, that experimentally prooued what a rod in lye could do with the curstest boy in a Citty; and founde the Imparitiue moode a better Oratour,

then the Optatiue. It may fortune, the same man hath such a Whipfydoxy in store for a lack-fauce, or vnmanerly puppy, as may Schoole him to turne-ouer a new leafe, and to cry the pittifullest Peccauī of a wofull Penitent. For my part, whom at this instant it smartly behoueth to be resolute, I confesse I was neuer more entangled, and intricated in the discourse of mine owne reason, then since I had to do with this desperate Dick ; that darèth vtter, and will cogge any thing to serue his turne. Not to confute him, in some respectes were perhaps better : to confute him, is necessary. Were it possible, to confute him in not confuting him, I am of opinion, it would be done : (for Infolency, or any iniury would be repressed by order of Law, where order of Law is a sufficient remedy : and Silence, in some cases, were the finest Eloquence ; or Scorne, the fittest answere) : and haply I could wish, not to confute him in confuting him, (for the discoouery of Cunny-catchers doth not greatly edifie some bad mindes) : but seeing he is so desperate, that he will not be confuted with not confuting, I must desire his Patience, to be a little content to be confuted with confuting, rather after his, or others guise, then after my manner. *Aunswere not a foole according to his foolishnesse, lest thou also be like him : answere a foole according to his foolishnesse, lest he be wise in*

5th time

20
40

25

his owne conceit. They are both Prouerbes of the wisest Master of Sentences: of whom also I haue learned that to the horſe belongeth a whip; to the aſſe a ſnaffle; to the fooles backe a rod. Let no man be wiſer then Salomon. The fooles-head muſt not / be ſuffed to coy itſelfe: the colt muſt feele the whip, or the wande; the aſſe the ſnaffle, or the gode; the fooles backe the rod, or the cudgell. Let the colt, the Aſſe, the foole beware in time: or he may peraduenture feele them indeede: with ſuch a *Tu autem*, as hath not often bene quauered in any language. If Peace, or Treatie may not be heard, Warre ſhall commaunde Peace; and he muſe the mouth of rankeſt Impudency, or fierceſt hoſtility, that can do it; and do it otherwiſe, then is yet imagined: and yet nothing like that inſpired Gentlewooman. Whoſe Penne is the ſhott of the muſket, or rather a ſhaft of heauen, ſwifter then any arrow, and mightier then any hand-weapon, when Curteſie is repulſed, and hoſtility muſt enforce amity: but otherwiſe how gratiouſly amiable, how diuinely ſweete? Gentlemen, looke vpon the louely gliſtering Starre of the morning; and looke for ſuch an Oriēt Starre, whē She diſplayeth the reſplendyſhng beames of her bright wit, and pure bounty. Meane-while, if ſome little ſhimering light appeare at a little creuiſe, I haue my requeſt;

and some pretty conuenient leysure, to take order with an other kinde of Straunge Newes in Westminster Hall. It is some mens fortune to haue their handes full of vnneedefull businesse attonce: and for miselfe, I should make no great matter of two, or three such glowing Irons in the fier, were it not some small grieffe, or discouragement, to consider, that nothing can be perfectly, or sufficiently performed by halues, or fragments. Which necessary interruption hath bene the vtter disgrace of the premisses; and a great hinderance to my larger Discourses, more ample trifles. I can but craue pardon; and prepare amendes, as leysure and occasion may affourde opportunity. Learned wittes can skilfully examine, and honest mindes / will vprightly consider Circumstances, with curteous regarde of Fauour, or due respect of Reason: in whose onely Indifferency, as in a safe, and sweet harborough, I repose my whole affiance, and securitie, as heretofore. And so for this present I surcease to trouble your gentle curtesies: of whose Patience I haue (according to particular occasions) sometime vnmannerly, but modestly; often familiarly, but sincerely; most-what freely, but consideratly; alwayes confidently, but respectiuelly; in euery part simply, in the whole tediously prefumed vnder correction. I writ onely at idle howers, that I dedicate onely to *Idle Howers*: or

would not haue made so vnreasonably bold, in no needfuller Discourse, then *the Prayse, or Supererogation of an Assē.*

This 27. of Aprill: 1593. Your mindefull
debtour, G. H.

FINIS.



*Errours escaped in the Printing.
With certaine Additions to be inserted.**

<i>Page.</i>	<i>faultes.</i>	<i>amended.</i>
26	for angoy,	read agony.
31	fcholeth,	fchooleth.
49	bewixt	betwixt.
67	railing ftile, without the two prickes, or colon.	
85	very Minifter	euery Minifter.
90	instringment	infringement.
98	not will	will not.
107	looker-on	lookers-on.
121	fuch sweating	fuch a sweating.
139	or discourfer	or a discourfer.
147	thy riot	by riot.
202	fuprifes	furprifes.
205	at the leaft	or the leaft.
219	Orientall	Orient.

K Now alfo, Gentle Reader, that it was the Writers meaning to deuide this Treatife into three bookes: the Second beginning at the *Aduertifement to Pap-hatchet and Martin Marprelate*: the Third at, *So then of Pappadocio*: but in the Originall, or vncorrected copy there was

* These have all been attended to in their respective places.

not any such diuifion exprefly fett-downe: neyther were the Additions following, inferted in their proper places, but annexed to the end of the Third booke, noted thus:

In the *First Booke*, page 46. after *Cloude*, infert. What mafter. [See p. 93, ll. 13—24.]

In the *Second Booke*, Page 77. after *edifeth*, infert. Plato conceites? [See p. 135, ll. 7—18.]

In the *same booke*, Page 87. after *Innouation*, infert. And I *Poplars*. [See p. 149, l. 21, to p. 150, l. 22.]

In the *Third booke*, Page 205, after *Pollicie*, infert. that Learning cogging. [See p. 310, l. 9, to p. 311, l. 8.]

Thefe fower Additions in their feuerall bookes, I commende to the correction of the curteous Reader: and fo take my leaue.

FINIS.



TO THE RIGHT WORSHIPFULL

my very good friend, M. Doctour Haruey.

GOOD M. Doctour Haruey, promise I account debte, especially to so especial a frend: and therefore I haue now againe laboured to discharge miselfe of it. I would I were of desert to set-forth your long-deferued prayse, and of hability to expresse your singular habilities, in stile, knowledge, and other most commendable vertues. What is in my power, the least of your frendes shall commaunde: what is not, I can but wish: which I would most earnestly wish, if that might serue, though I neuer should wish more. I will not trouble your grauer studies, but pray for your healthes continuance: and will most willingly performe more, if occasion serue.

Oxford, this 10. of Iuly. 1593.

Yours euer to commaunde,

Iohn Thorius.

Sonet.

DEfam'd by One, who most himselfe defameth,
Write worthy Haruey: for the wise applaude
thee :

Shame be his hyer, that fowly himselfe shameth,
And would of thy deserued right defraude thee.
And | if you force the vnderferued wrong,
Wherewith some simple Ignorant distaines thee :
You in your Wisedome may exceede as long,
As he in Folly foolishly disdaines thee.
For sharpe-eyde Equitie hath descride to all,
Th' iniurious wayne, that settes his penne to schoole :
VVhose railing tendes vnto your wisedomes fall,
And prooues all fonde, to prooue himselfe a Foole.
VVhich monstrous Folly would be leaft in hast :
As Wisedomes age will make him know at last.

John Thorius.

Inclosed in the same Letter.

AND that I might not be held last in remembrance, though absent, that in your presenee haue fought the selfe-proffering cause of after-memory : I haue once more, (as he, that deuoteth himselfe, and his poore labours to your good liking), how badly you may see, but how hartely I wish you could see, or I could say ; writ these my pure deuotions, and Zealous lines : with as

true desire to honour yourselfe, according to your worth, as I haue bene wanting the desert, which your curteous nature hath afforded me. I request Sir, but your acceptance, and your fauour, which if I gaine, I haue got more, then my due : and so wishing your continuall blisse, I ende, as one with oft prayers desiring to be held,

Your bound by much desert,

Antony Chewt.

Sonet. /

Proceede most worthy Lines, in your disdain,
Against the false suggestions you abuse :
VVhose rascall stile deserued hath to gaine
The hateful title of a railing Muse.
Doubtlesse the wisest, that shall chaunce to read you,
In true Iudiciall of a quiet thought,
Will giue applause vnto the wit, that bread you,
And you shall winne the good, that you haue sought.
VVinne more : and since the foole defames you still,
The foole, whom Shame hath stained with fowle
blott,
Performe on him your discontented will :
Fame shall be your meede : Shame shall be his lott.
And so proceeding, you shall so redeeme
The name, that he would drowne in blacke esteeme.
Subscribed, Sh : VVy :
for, Shores VVife.

Sur l'Apologie de Monsieur le très-docte &
très-eloquent Docteur Haruey : par le
Sieur de Fregeuille du Gaut.

*Celuy qui prouoqué publie sa defence,
Peut avecques raison sa cause déployer ;
La Loy de Talion ne peut moins, qu'ottroyer
Iust permission de repayer l'offence.*

*Mais celuy qui enflé, a escrire commence,
A diffamer autruy, tachant a s'employer :
De droit ne peut pretendre adueu ou bon loyer,
Ains l'infame intenté luy vient pour recompense.*

*J'aime | pourtant par tout vn stile moderé,
Mesmes si on respond au sot demesuré,
Car on n'a point raison d'imiter sa sottise.*

*Marri sui mon d'Haruey de te voir prouoqué,
Mais tres-aise qu'estant indignement piqué ;
Ta Docte responce est eloquente & raffise.*

His Sonet, that will iustifie his word, and dedicateth
Nashes S. Fame to Immortalitie.

*A Dame, more sweetly braue, then nicely fine ;
Yet fine, as finest Gentlewomen be :
Brighter, then Diamant in euery line ;
Is Penniles so VVitleffe still ? quoth She.
If Nash will felly gnash, and rudely flash :
Snip-snap a crash, may lend S. Fame a gash.*

Skill read the Ryme, and put it in Truthes purse :
 (Experience kisseth Reconcilements hand) :
 If warning-peece be scorn'd, Spite may heare worse :
 Though Looue no warrour be, Right leades a bande.
 How faine would Curtesie these iarres surcease ?
 How glad would Charitie depart in peace ?

But if Sir Rash continue still Sir Swash ;
 He lues, that will him dash, and lash, and sqwash.

Hæc quoq ; culpa tua est : hæc quoq ; pœna
 tua est.

An other occasionall admonition.

Fame rowf'd herselfe, and gan to swash about :
 Boyes swarm'd : youthes throng'd : bloudes swore :
 brutes rear'd the howt :

Her meritorious worke, a Wonderclowte :
 Did euer Fame so brauely play the Lowte ?
 I / chaunc'd vpon the Ryme : and wondred much
 What courage of the world, or Mifter wight
 Durst terrible S. Fame so rashly tuch.

Or her redoutable Bull-begging knight.
 Incontinent I heard a piercing voyce,
 Not Ecchos voyce, but shriller then a Larke :
 Sith Destiny allottes no wiser choyce,
 Pastime appose the Pickle-herring clarke.
 Quiet thy rage, Imperious Swish-swash :
 Or Wo be to thy horrible trish-trash.

Est benè, non potuit dicere : dixit, Erit.


An Apoftrophe to the Health of
his abufed Friendes.

*Liue Father ſweet : and miſcreant Varlets dye,
That wrong my parent Hart, and brother Eye.
Deereſt of Eyes, contemne thy caitiue foes :
Kindeſt of Hartes, enioy thy firme reſoſe.
Sky, with a patron Eye aſpeēt that Eye,
That Eye, eſpouſed to the Virgin Sky.
Art, with a Looouer hart preſerue that Hart,
That Hart, deuoted to the heauenly Art.
Bleſſings, deſcend from your Emphyreal throne.
And lend a bounteous eare to ſuppliant mone.
Ambroſiall ſpringes of cleereſt influence,
Fountaines reſtoratiue of cordiall bliſſe,
Deigne Zeale proſtrate your tendreſt indulgence,
And ſouerainly redreſſe that is amiſſe.*

L'enuoy.

*Volumes of Thankes, and Prayſe, your ſtore combine
In paſſionateſt Hymnes, and Pſalmes diuine.*

The Printer's Postscript.

weet Gentlemē, hauing committed the Premiffes to the Preffe, and acquainting certaine learned and fine men with fome other of the commendatory Letters, and Sonnets of M. Thorius, and M. Chewt: there was fuch an especial liking conceiued of two other their writings, that I was finally entreated, or rather ouertreated, to giue them alfo their welcome in Print; as not the vnfitteft lines, that haue bene published to interteine laſe howers, or to employ drowſie eyes. Sometime in the braueft ſhowes there is little performed: and ſometime a poore Publicane may worke as great a worke of Supererogation as a proude Pharife. I am not the meeteſt to blaſe other mens armes: and they are beſt furniſhed to be their owne tongues, that can ſo well pleade for themſelues, and their friendes. I can but recomende their learned exerciſe, and mine own vnlearned labour, to your gentle acceptation.

*To the right worshipfull, my very assured
frend, M. Doctour Haruey.*

MY filence thus long, good M. Doctour Haruey, was not occasioned either by forgetfulnesse, or by negligence : but rather for want both of conuenient leasure, and of sufficient argument : being very vnwilling either to spend time often in writing of vnmateriall lines, or to trouble any especiall frend with reading them. Yet because amitie is maintained by this loouing kinde of intercourse, & because Custome hath allowed, that Affection induced, to expresse a carefull memory of the continuance of frendship, by writing euen vpon small, or no occasion : though the Letter were signed with nothing else, / but, *Si vales, bene est : ego valeo* : lest longer filence might cause me to incurre iust reprehension, and that you may receaue some slender token of my often thinking on you : I send you enclosed three *Stanzaes*, though simple in conceit, or other regard, yet were they equall to my good will, they would, vndoubtedly excell, and should be some way futable to your right excellent giftes. If they please, or not displease you, and may seeme worthy, or not altogether vnworthy to serue as foiles with my other Sonnets, which you receaued before, to those much worthier Verfes, which you

haue of much happier Poets, then miselfe : you may therein do your pleasure, whereto onely they are consecrated. Thus hoping that you are persuaded of me, as of one affectionatly your owne to vse, and commaunde at your appointment, I leaue you with my most hartly, and humble recommendations.

Oxford: the 3. of August. 1593.

Yours alwayes at commaunde,

Iohn Thorius.

Stanzaes.

*Among the Greekes, sweet Homers copious Verse
Foregoing times to Fames swift winges commended :
The Latins, Virgils noble worke reherse :
Nor yet in these were auncient prayfes ended.
Demosthen's rich stile, thorough Greece was blazed,
And Tullyes forcing tounge made Roome amazed
Our moderne Age to egall with the passed,
The Italian pleasing Muse hath done her best :
The learned French Pennes haue themselues sur-
passed :
And worthy English wittes haue bannisht rest.
Midst whom, who not emblason Haruey's name,
Wrong him, themselues, and Englands growing Fame.*

*Yeelding | fond Nash thy glory shalt not staine,
 But rather shalt encrease thy prayse hereby :
 Thy frendes qfall know thy iudgement not so vaine,
 But thou discernes where true desert doth fly.
 And thy desert by so much shall seeme greater,
 By how much thou art knowne to know thy better.*

John Thorius.

Sir, such a patheticall Affe haue I found deciphered in your most learned and witty Discourse of that poore Creture, as I know will proue the eternall Memoratiue of one M. Nash. Yet I by Experience haue found more : that it is the nature of a true Affe, (to which Affe peradventure this was dedicated) that a *greene Tigge* being hand-somly tyed to his chappes, he no sooner smelleth it, but he followes his nose so farre, that he scapeth fayre in vneuen ground, if he breaketh not his necke. And this Note I would not but impart vnto you : as a Caueat worthy to be remēbred amongst other secrets of that beast. For doubtlesse your philosophicall Affe will make Alchimy vpon it. I pray you dispose of it at your best pleasure. When any other such Memorandum fortunes into my hand, you shall see it : and so in hast recommending you to your better studies, I rest Sir,

at your seruice.

An : Ch.

The Affes Figg.

- So long the Rhennish furie of thy braine,
 Incenst with hot fume of a Stilliard Clime,
 Lowd-lying Nash, in liquid termes did raine,
 Full of absurdities, and of slaundrous ryme.
- So | much thy Pot-iests in a Tapster humour,
 (For thats the Quintessence of thy Newgate fashjon)
 Thy tossepot maiesty, and thy Fame did rumour,
 In wondrous Agonyes of an Alehouse passion.
- So well thy wydemouth'd, or thy Oisterwhore phrase
 (Yet Gentry bragges her of thy lowsie degree)
 Aptly hath knowne thine Armory to blase
 In termes peculiar vnto none but thee.
- So soone fue Penniworth of thy groser witt
 (Yet thou art witty, as a woodcock would be)
 More then autenticall, hath learn'd to gett
 Thy Muse intituled, as it truly should be.
- And now so neatly hath thy railing merit
 (I should haue said Ramme-ally meditations)
 Procur'd applause vnto thy Clarret spirite,
 And sack-sopt miseries of thy Consutations.
- That now each Iuy-bush weepes her Teares in ale:
 The Fish-wiues Commonwealth, alack forlorne,

*Moornes in small drink, sharp, single, sowre, and
stale :*

*And thy long-booted gentry, ragged and torne
Wailes new petitions to the Diuels good grace :
Although the last, God knowes, gott little meede.
But thow'lt to Hell, when shiftes can haue no place,
Perhaps to Hanging too, when time shall neede.
Yet first wilt ride, raile, ryme me downe to Hell :
(Oh but beware strange bugges at such a game) :
I haue a trick, to teach a Goose to spell
Himselfe an Ass, out-off his Asses name.*

An: Ch.

FINIS.

END OF VOL. II.



Printed by Hazell, Watson, and Viney, Limited, London and Aylesbury.

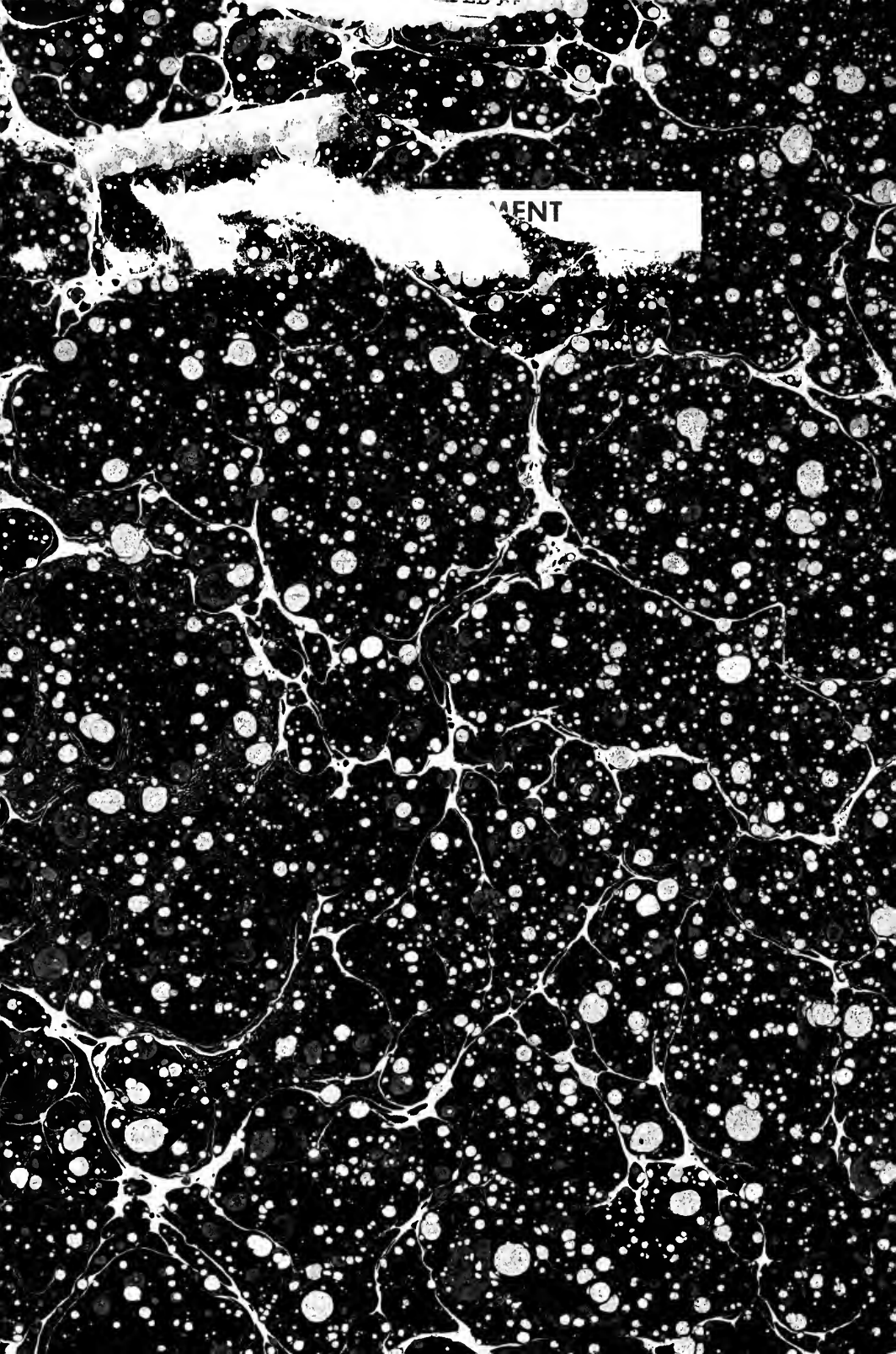




A2 G7

1884

v. 2



AGENT

U. S. DEPT. OF AGRICULTURE
LIBRARY
C035628186

150
928
H341
HARVEY
763

